

템펠

파그마의 후예

MAYA & MARU GAME FANTASY STORY

박새날 게임 판타지 장편소설

마루&마야

Overgeared

– 템빨 –

- Part 12 -

-Author-
Park Saenal

[Rainbow Turtle (Wuxiaworld)]

Chapter 501

"Let's go! Overgeared Skeletons!"

Clack! Clack clack clack!

Reidan's desert. A black-haired man was crossing the desert with two skeletons.

Hwiiiiing~~~~~

"Ah!" *Spit! Spit spit!*

A young man felt pained as the wind blew sand into his eyes and mouth. Two skeletons followed obliviously behind him.

Clack!

Clack clack! Clack!

The skeletons couldn't withstand the pressure of the wind and their joints twisted in different directions. They were like gentle dancers as their limbs broke down.

[The Overgeared Skeletons have suffered catastrophic damage!]

[Overgeared Skeleton (1) has returned to the soil.]

[Overgeared Skeleton (2) has returned to the soil.]

[The Overgeared Skeletons won't lose experience.]

"..."

After capturing the 8th city. Grid wanted to try hunting young scorpions in the desert

with the skeletons. The level of the young scorpions was only 20~30. Rather than being classified as monsters, it was classified as a monster's prey. If Grid supported them well, the Overgeared Skeletons could hunt them and raise their levels.

But what was this? The Overgeared Skeletons were destroyed by the wind before they could even meet the scorpions! Grid was stunned.

"Wow... Seriously trash."

Undead monsters were known for their weak durability. Their bodies were easily broken and this was directly related to a decline in fighting ability. But the Overgeared Skeletons were different. Since their basic stats were garbage, their bodies were broken and they were killed. These skeletons were pathetic and were among the weakest undead Grid had ever encountered.

"The power obtained from defeating a direct descendant..."

He knew that the Overgeared Skeletons were highly likely to have great growth potential. But no matter how well they were raised, it was evident they would never compare to a death knight. Was it worth the trouble to raise these guys? Grid couldn't help questioning.

'But if there's one good point...'

The Overgeared Skeletons didn't lose experience if they died. They just died. If he repeatedly summoned them to hunt, he might be able to raise their levels.

"I should hunt rabbits when I return to Reidan."

Grid lost motivation and logged out. It was time to sleep. He hadn't been able to sleep well for two days, so his head and body were very tired.



While Grid was sleeping. As always, Lael was working on behalf of Grid. The appearance of the hard working staff member became an inspiration for the Overgeared members, while inspiring compassion at the same time.

The Gauss Kingdom. A kingdom located on the northernmost point of the continent, bordered by the Eternal Kingdom. The east and west areas of the two kingdoms were

close to each other and had a bad relationship. The Eternal Kingdom and Gauss Kingdom didn't have a good relationship.

In order to advance into the central part of the continent, Gauss must pass through Eternal. In order to advance to the sea, Eternal must pass through Gauss. A separate tariff had to be paid in order for them to trade with each other. The Gauss Kingdom was in a worse position than the Eternal Kingdom, which could easily enter the center of the continent.

"If it wasn't for Earl Ashur...!"

Marquis Valtin. He had been serving the Gauss Kingdom for generations and was responsible for the defense of the fortified city Borneo. Borneo was a very important base for defending the border of the Gauss Kingdom. It faced the fortified city of Patrian in the Eternal Kingdom and frequently clashed with Patrian.

Historically, the number of battles between Borneo and Patrian had reached the hundreds. But war didn't occur in the present day. It was due to one of the 10 great magicians on the continent. Earl Ashur. Since he became lord of Patrian, Marquis Valtin didn't dare go against Patrian. What did it matter how well trained his army was? They would be burned to ashes by the magic!

"I should've learned magic when I was young..."

Instead, he learned swordsmanship. Marquis Valtin was staring out the window when the voice of a deputy entered his ears.

"A guest from the Eternal Kingdom has come to see you."

"Hrmm."

The Gauss Kingdom might be at odds with the Eternal Kingdom, but that didn't mean there were no interactions. As a neighbouring kingdom, there were many superficial policies implemented. In order to enter the Gauss Kingdom from the Eternal Kingdom, everyone had to go through Borneo. Therefore, Borneo was often visited by the king or nobles of Eternal.

"Come in."

Marquis Valtin politely welcomed the guest. No matter what he thought, he was a

professional politician. He couldn't be rude to guests visiting from Eternal. After a moment. A man entered Marquis Valtin's office. He was a young man with silver hair.

'No, isn't he a boy?'

The guest was very young. The inwardly confused Marquis Valtin smiled and spoke, "Welcome to Borneo. But what should I call you?"

The silver-haired boy bowed and introduced himself politely.

"I am Earl Lauel of Eternal. I come on behalf of Duke Grid of Reidan."

"Hah..."

Marquis Valtin's eyes sharpened. The names Lauel and Grid. Marquis Valtin were familiar with them. There was no way he couldn't know their names. A few years ago, they were the ones who rescued Reinhardt from the golem invasion. Marquis Valtin was interested in those who were praised as the 'Kingdom's Heroes.' Thus, he was familiar with the latest situation.

'Grid killed Prince Ren, who was first in line for the throne.'

Due to that, the relationship between the Eternal royal family and Reidan was very bad. Perhaps Reidan was already isolated within Eternal. The fact that people were sent here...

'If it's true, this situation will be fun.'

Marquis Valtin was filled with anticipation. He didn't show it as he asked calmly, "You're the famous Earl Lauel? Huhu, we have heard of you even in the Gauss Kingdom. It's an honor to meet you."

Lauel shook the thick hands of Marquis Valtin as politely as possible. Then he replied, "It's an honor to meet Marquis Valtin, the lion of Gauss. Isn't even Earl Ashur, one of the great great magicians on the continent, afraid of you?"

"Hahahat! I guess so!"

Marquis Valtin had an inferiority complex towards Earl Ashur. Lauel's flattery was sufficient. In addition, Lauel wasn't telling a lie. Marquis Valtin had mastered a

specialized combat style. The ruler of Borneo. There was no person more suitable for the role of defending the Gauss Kingdom. In fact, the reason Earl Ashur didn't invade Borneo was due to Marquis Valtin.

Marquis Valtin laughed pleasantly and naturally asked, "Why did you come here?"

Lauel explained bluntly. "Eternal's royal family is making Reidan impoverished. Duke Grid can no longer endure it and has decided to become independent from Eternal."

It was a well-known story that Grid only pledged allegiance to King Wiesbaden when he became a duke. In addition, he was currently framed for Prince Ren's death. On the surface, there was a bad relationship between Grid and the Eternal Kingdom. That's why Lauel was certain. Marquis Valtin wouldn't doubt his words.

"Duke Grid needs Marquis Steim's help to become completely independent. In order to connect the north and west, Duke Grid made a plan to invade and occupy Patrian."

"..."

Marquis Valtin waited patiently. He tried to suppress the smile that wanted to leak out. He was inwardly filled with joy as Lauel asked him.

"As you know, Reidan is a desolate land. The population is less than 20,000 and the troops are few. It's natural for the quality of the soldiers to be low. We can't occupy Patrian with just our strength. So Marquis Valtin, please help us. Send the powerful soldiers of Borneo as reinforcements and help us occupy Patrian."

Lauel bowed his head and begged as much as possible. He was showing his desperation. Marquis Valtin didn't doubt the current situation and nodded.

"What will the Gauss Kingdom get in return for helping Duke Grid?"

"If the occupation of Patrian succeeds, the north and west of Eternal will be connected and ruled by Duke Grid." Lauel passed the papers he prepared in advance to Marquis Valtin. "Duke Grid has promised to remove all tariffs, as well as give a monthly tribute to the Gauss Kingdom. The details are contained in this agreement."

"Hmmm...?"

Marquis Valtin's smile became progressively larger as he read the contents of the

agreement. The conditions were so great that it was difficult to control his facial expression any longer. He finally made a suspicious expression.

"I know that Duke Grid is Marquis Steim's son-in-law. Marquis Steim is ruler of the north. Why don't you borrow his power to occupy Patrian instead of coming to me?"

"King Aslan is blocking all communications with the north and there's no way to contact Marquis Steim. Due to that, Duke Grid has become more obsessed with Patrian."

It was an answer that was easy to guess. Marquis Valtin nodded. "Okay, I understand. However, Duke Grid needs to handle Earl Ashur. We want to avoid losing as many troops as possible."

"Of course. Believe in us. I'm sure that you're aware of our skills."

"Kingdom's Hero... It should be enough to keep Earl Ashur in check. Okay, I will send the army."

The soldiers of Borneo were the elite. They were trained to participate in war at any time, making them thirsty for it.

'Of course, it's the same for me!'

The first thing the excited Marquis Valtin did was to send a letter to the Gauss royal family. After delivering the story about the war to the royal family, the army was reorganized and headed to Patrian with Lauel. The final number was 10,000 troops.



Reidan had a total of 4,000 troops. 3,000 of them were involved in this expedition. If this expedition failed, the base of Reidan would be shaken. But the Overgeared members weren't nervous. It was difficult for them to think they would be defeated in a war where all the Overgeared members except for Grid were participating. In particular, the presence of Blood Warrior Katz gave a strong belief to everyone. It was difficult to find a stronger presence on the battlefield.

"But why is the marching speed so fast?"

The Overgeared members wondered as the 3,000 soldiers crossed the desert. The

marching speed of the army was much faster than expected. Reidan's soldiers might be accustomed to the desert, but wouldn't this fast marching speed make them tired more easily?

Toban soothed his worried colleagues. "Commander Asmophel must have a reason. His strategies are above ours. We just have to believe in him."

"Hmm, indeed."

The Overgeared members were in the rear to protect the supply wagons from being attacked by giant worms. They thought that the man at the forefront of the army was Asmophel. They never dreamt that Asmophel would be missing in such an important moment.

"Go. Destination. Patrian."

His maximum intelligence was 20. The commander who didn't know anything, Jude, started the rapid advance.

Chapter 502

『The first legendary class! The first person to become a duke! The holder with the most medals in the National Competition! The master of the Overgeared Guild! The name of this brilliant person is Grid!! What's the secret behind his level up that shot up forward 33 positions in the rankings? Are you curious? Do you want to know? Yes! I'll tell you everything! In a while, Grid's hunting video will be revealed on OGC Station! A live broadcast! You can watch it on TV, the Internet, or on the radio! Please use the OGC channel!!』

OGC put a lot into this broadcast. They invested all their capital into advertising because they were certain it would be an unconditional success. As a result, OGC's ads were repeatedly played in dozens of countries on the Internet, TV, newspapers, and magazines.

It was an excellent choice. The spread of the advertisements to the whole world was enormous. OGC's Internet channel became congested with users and OGC quickly secured more advertising funds than they invested. OGC had a festive atmosphere.

"This is completely the best...! It's way more than we expected!"

"It has no choice but to succeed. We have secured a number of viewers that is comparable to the National Competition."

"One billion views will look funny in a few days."

"Bunny Bunny's private station has also gathered millions of people."

"This is Grid's influence! He really is God Grid!"

"Everyone is wondering where Grid is hunting and how he's raising his level so quickly."

"They dream of becoming a ranker by obtaining the secrets to levelling."

"Okay! Let's do our best for a perfect broadcast! This is an opportunity for OGC to secure the world!"

After a while. The live broadcast of Grid's hunting began. The number of viewers continued to rise, while the number of users logged into Satisfy decreased. It was almost similar to the time of the National Competition.

This was Laue's intention.



"Move forward. Move forward. Move forward."

Reidan's army had Jude at its head. Their marching speed was very fast. They crossed the hot desert as if they were running. The soldiers felt like they were going to die. The hot sun shone down on them and the desert was sizzling. Armed with heavy armor and weapons, they didn't rest and marched as if they were running.

It was hell. They couldn't deal with the hardships. The field work under Piaro and Asmophel's mental education wasn't as hard as this.

"Pant... Pant! Th... Thirsty! Give me a break to drink water, please."

"Pant pant! Aren't we going to die?"

"Hah... I see my dog that died last year in that haze over there... She's calling me over..."

"Seeing an illusion of a dog, not a woman... This guy has never experienced love..."

The limit. The soldiers were covered in sweat and on the verge of collapsing. There were some who wanted to kill somebody, some who wanted to go home, and most of them had tears in their eyes.

'An army that can't maintain its rank has lost its role as an army.'

'They still have stamina but morale has dropped to the worst.'

'Unbelievable... In this state, there will be those who run away. The army will collapse before they even fight.'

'They're also the elites of Reidan...!'

The eight young knights selected and trained by Piaro and Asmophel. They tried not

to express it, but they were also tired. They followed Jude while looking at the soldiers and finally couldn't bear it.

"Commander Jude, can I ask for the reason behind such a fast marching speed?"

"There is plenty of time before the arrival time that Earl Lauel specified. I don't think we need to hurry. The soldiers' morale has lowered and their stamina..."

Jude had been Grid's knight for five years. It was rumored that Grid even specifically picked him. The ravaged Reidan that had turned into a desert. Grid was the great hero who saved their home, which had been abandoned. The young knights naturally envied Jude, who had been recognized by Grid for five years. They didn't dare doubt Jude's abilities. They believed in him and followed him.

But now they felt doubts. Jude's way of commanding the army was too ignorant. It was illogical and inefficient. Maybe Jude was weak when it came to strategy?

Jude replied to the shaken young knights. He did it while moving forward.

"The meeting point. Quickly. Quickly. My Lord. He said it. Quickly."

"...Hah."

The battlefield where they would risk their lives was called a meeting place? The young knights were thrilled.

'For him, the battlefield is... '

'A place where he meets friends?'

'Truly great...! This is the dignity of a veteran who has stood right beside the great hero...!'

"Heok?"

The young knights were suddenly astonished. For some reason, they thought the desert heated up even more and a sea of fire appeared in front of them.

"T-The desert is burning?"

"Heok! Stop! Stop!"

They didn't know what was happening. The desert was burning and blocking the path to Patrian. It was impossible to jump into the fire with the precious soldiers. The young knights urgently ordered the soldiers to stop marching at once. But Jude continued to run. He didn't shrink back from the raging fire and just advanced.

"What are you doing?"

"Please stop!"

The young knights tried to stop Jude. But it was too late. While they were taking care of the soldiers, Jude was already running into the flames.

"This is crazy...!"

Was he crazy? The moment that the young knights paled.

Swaaaaah!

The flames swallowed up Jude faded away. A splendid oasis was present where the flames had been. It was clear blue water. The 3,000 soldiers of Reidan couldn't close their mouths.

"The fire was an illusion...! Earl Ashur created a trap!"

"Commander Jude noticed it!"

"Amazing! Really amazing!"

Jude was soaking himself in the oasis. He plunged into the sea of fire only for it to be cool, making him smile.

"Water. Good. Clear. Jude. Thirsty. Drink."

"Waaahhhhhhhh!"

The morale of Reidan's troops pierced through the sky. Their weariness disappeared. The young knights were shocked by Jude.

‘He knew the resting point in advance? He’s thorough.’

‘Earl Ashur was aware of Reidan’s rebellion and designed something to keep us in check.’

‘Commander Jude is in a different dimension from us. He truly is Duke Grid’s knight.’

At that moment, the young knights and 3,000 troops had complete trust in Jude. Jude obtained a new title.

[Trusted Commander]

The physical strength and defense of the troops he commanded would slightly increase, while the stamina consumption rate would decrease.



“Isn’t this amazing?”

"It truly is Sir Asmophel."

"No wonder why he was called one of the pillars of the empire."

At the rear of the 3,000 troops. The Overgeared members were escorting the supplies convoy and their speed was naturally slow. They were moving wagons and couldn’t keep up with the marching rate of the main army. The Overgeared members felt disbelief.

Asmophel was completely neglecting food transportation, one of the most important aspects. They suspected him of being an incompetent commander. However, these doubts disappeared after a while. The vibration and dust that occurred because of the 3,000 troops was huge. This disturbance was transmitted underground and suppressed the appearance of the giant worms.

‘He stopped the giant worms from showing up? It’s a strategy that fully understands and exploits the characteristics of the giant worms.’

‘Thanks to this, the rear of the army and the food supplies are perfectly safe.’

‘He lead the weary soldiers to an oasis and immediately gave them a break.’

‘He figured out the location of the oasis?’

Indeed, Lauel was great. He accurately identified Asmophel’s talents and boldly delegated 3,000 soldiers to him. The Overgeared members believed that the future was bright.



The fortified city, Patrian.

Earl Ashur perceived a mysterious atmosphere. Adventurers started to disappear from the streets and an unpleasant silence dominated the city. In addition, one of the traps he set up on the road between Reidan and Patrian had been destroyed.

“...Is Grid finally moving?”

It was natural for Grid to invade Patrian. Grid had killed Prince Ren who swung a blade at him. It was no different from announcing his hostility to the Eternal Kingdom. That's why Earl Ashur was well prepared. He thoroughly defended Patrian, the only route that Grid could use to advance to the north. The sea of fire was one of the defenses.

‘It was broken so easily... I can still stop him.’

Earl Ashur understood Grid’s strength very well. He had seen it for himself. But now the situation had changed. At that time, he had been careless when facing Grid. In addition, he was confused because of the swordsman who looked like a beggar. Now he had grasped Grid’s power. He was confident that he could beat Grid because he was fully prepared.

In the first place, a magician showed their overwhelming firepower in a war. In particular, the terrain was on their side. There was no chance that Patrian would be occupied.

‘There is one variable.’

The presence of his son Bland, who was taken as a hostage. The only remaining flesh of his wife.

‘Can I turn away from him?’

His family had served Eternal's royal family for generations. From a cold point of view, it was right to chose the kingdom over family.

'My father, grandfather, and great grandfather would've all chosen the kingdom.'

Yes, he knew. It was possible to give birth to more children, but there was only one kingdom.

'I know...'

His heart ached like it was torn. He hated his fate as a guardian that had been given to him since he was born. There was nothing more sad than having to turn away from the person he loved most in this world.

'Bland... If this stupid father drives you to death, I will also die. Only after I smash Reidan!'

Earl Ashur stared out the window with hollow eyes. Then someone came up to him.

"I understand your sad heart."

The man was covered by a robe. He was someone who had been staying in Patrian for a few months already. His identity? Earl Ashur didn't know. The person was sent by King Aslan. Earl Ashur wasn't feeling good and frowned at the robed man.

"Are you finally going to show off your skills?"

King Aslan said that this robed man was the 'force' that would defend Patrian against Duke Grid's attack. In fact, Earl Ashur was aware that the robed man was someone great. But he wasn't happy. He didn't want a person with an unknown identity near him. The robed man faced Earl Ashur's hostility and bowed respectfully.

"I will definitely rescue your son. Believe in me."

"...?"

The robed man who made the ridiculous declaration. As he bent forward, his robe moved to reveal a blade that was strangely split into a Y character. It was the sword that had killed Prince Ren on a cold desert night last year. It was the emergence of the Solo Number Knight who defeated the Great Swordsman Chucksley.

Chapter 503

[You have entered the Vampire's Underground City (8).]

[The entrance of the dungeon is blocked. Contact with the outside world will be blocked.]

[You can't escape the dungeon until you have died or kill the dungeon boss.]

'Right here... '

'Grid was able to raise his level so quickly in this place.'

'8th city, does this mean that Reidan has seven more cities like this?'

'A territory with eight instant dungeons, the value is astronomical. This is why the Overgeared members can dominate the rankings.'

The world's best gaming BJ Bunny Bunny and the shooting staff of OGC Station. They entered the dungeon to shoot Grid's hunting broadcast and were immediately perplexed.

"Huh? Isn't it too dark?"

"Nothing can be seen."

"Turn on the lights!"

A darkness that didn't allow anything to be seen! The OGC staff and Bunny Bunny decided this couldn't continue and turned on their lights. Was it a view of the city that appeared as soon as the lights were turned on? No. It was the sight of at least 50 bats and wolves.

"Heok?"

"L-Large-toothed wolves and red-eyed bats!"

They were powerful monsters that were at least level 270. Dozens of these monsters showed up? The shooting staff shrank back while Bunny Bunny showed his professionalism.

"Viewers, look at this! A huge number of high level creatures are coming! Ahh! We will be wiped out! Will we die before we can pass on Grid's levelling secrets?"

The moment that the viewers gulped and felt great tension because of Bunny Bunny's words.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship."

Grid's dancing had become much more natural after getting the diamond capsule. His cloak flapped as he moved quickly and generated a strong energy.

"Transcend."

Kwaaaaang!

At the same time, there was a blast of energy! The stones around Grid floated in the air. Grid's eyes became sharper under his black hair as he swiftly swung his sword.

Pepeng!

Pepepepeok!

Every time he swung the sword, energy blades shot out and killed the bats and wolves.

"Wow."

"Wah... So strong."

The shooting staff let out sounds of admiration. They knew that Grid was one of the best in Satisfy, but this was the first time they saw him hunting! They didn't think he would slay 50 monsters with levels in the late 200's in a flash. Grid scolded those whose mouths were open with shock.

"Next time, if you act selfishly and risk yourselves, then I won't save you again."

“Ah...! Ah, yes! I’m sorry!”

Unlike the hurriedly apologetic staff, Bunny Bunny asked unabashedly, “The monsters that just appeared are the vampires’ familiars. Do you raise your level while hunting the familiars until you meet the boss?”

Grid asked like he didn’t understand.

“The vampires’ familiars?”

“Huh? Ah, yes. Indeed.”

“I should hunt vampires.”

"...???"

Vampires were a senior species. They were overwhelming stronger than monsters of the same level and was a monster with the trinity of physical power, magic power, and intelligence. Common players avoided hunting vampires because they were very demanding to handle. Yet Grid said he was going to hunt vampires.

Bunny Bunny doubted his ears and turned his gaze towards his camera.

“Did you hear that? Grid says that he will hunt vampires! Maybe today we can witness the huge scene where a player hunts three or four vampires at the same time...! Heok!”

Bunny Bunny’s face turned white. The buildings in the city. Grid was standing in front of hundreds of coffins, not dozens? It was the first time Bunny Bunny realized that there were so many vampires in the world.

OGC’s announcer, Park Shinye carefully speculated. “Perhaps... Grid will raise his level by quietly breaking each coffin one by one... Kyaack!”

Announcer Park Shinye shrieked. The reason why she was surprised...

“Linked Kill Wave.”

Crazy Grid. He used a wide area skill to wake up hundreds of vampires simultaneously.

-Wow, boss class ⇨ ⇨

-The shooting team is wiped out!

-Sweet ⇨⇨⇨⇨⇨

The viewers forgot to eat their chicken. Every action that Grid showed after entering the vampire city was amazing and interesting. The immersion wasn't a joke. However, they felt desperate. Grid's levelling secret. It was impossible to follow him, even if they learned the secret.



Near Patrian.

'They are rabble.'

This was Marquis Valtin's impression after he joined Reidan's army. Reidan's soldiers were unimpressive. They were covered with sweat and panting like a tired dog on a summer's day.

'They weren't trained in the usual manner.'

Becoming this tired just from crossing the desert? Their stamina was low. It was truly pathetic.

'Indeed... They won't have the stamina to train normally.'

The circumstances behind Reidan's desertification and impoverishment were well known. It was difficult to even obtain food to eat. How could they afford to train the army in the harsh manner? It was natural for Reidan's soldiers to be weak.

'Just gathering 3,000 troops is great.'

There were 20,000 residents and 3,000 soldiers. It seemed like all the young men had come out.

'It will be the end of Reidan if we lose today.'

Pisik.

Marquis Valtin made a scoffing sound. Meanwhile, Lauel was talking in the guild chat

with the Overgeared members.

&Jishuka: We arrived half a day ahead of schedule, but we joined just in time?

&Toban: How did you know to align the time?

&Lauel: Jude would overuse the soldiers, so I took that into account. After thinking about it, I hastened the meeting with Marquis Valtin. Well, it's good that this is happening so quickly.

&Pon:... Jude? Why Jude?

&Lauel: What's with this reaction? Surely you still don't know? Jude is Reidan's commander. Asmophel received my permission to act freely.

&Vantner: Wow. Nonsense. The great commander was Jude?

&Ibellin: Lauel. Are you crazy? What fool would entrust Jude with an army? You should've left it to Jishuka or Peak Sword.

&Lauel: Does the commander have a role other than directing the march? It's a task that can easily be carried out by Jude. In the first place, I don't want to place the Overgeared members at the front where Marquis Valtin can see. He might become wary if he sees such outstanding people.

The convoy escort was also the most important part of the march.

On the other hand, Marquis Valtin's gaze was fixed on Jude.

'Amazing. He's like an ogre.'

Large muscles harder than stones could be seen. Indeed, a person praised as the hero of Eternal would have such a great physique.

That's right. Marquis Valtin thought that Jude was Grid.

'He is only staring at the front?'

Grid (Jude) was just looking at the front, not even bothering to thank Marquis Valtin who brought a large army of 10,000 troops. His eyes were hollow and Marquis Valtin didn't know what he was thinking. It was the point where Grid wouldn't hear anything. This wasn't a normal appearance. It was remarkable.

Marquis Valtin felt admiration.

"The small fries are here."

The height of 20 meters. The man who appeared on Patrian's high walls gave both Reidan and Borneo soldiers a sense of oppression and despair.

Kurururung!

There was a thunderstorm above them and rain poured down. The man's ghost-like pale face was revealed under the flashing sky. It was Earl Ashur. The man who was still beautiful at 50 years old opened his mouth.

"I expected Reidan's revolt, but I never imagined it would coincide with Marquis Valtin's march. You are fools who don't know honor."

Marquis Valtin laughed.

"Your tough talk is still the same, Ashur! But I won't fall for your provocations today!"

He was confident. Originally, he would be scared of Earl Ashur. However, Grid was by his side.

'Grid and Reidan's army will keep him in check, while my troops can easily enter Patrian and occupy it.'

He was the reinforcements, so he wasn't in the position where he had to sacrifice his troops.

Ssik!

Lauel took a step forward as Marquis Valtin smiled. Then he politely spoke to Earl Ashur. "I am Lauel and I serve Duke Grid. It is an honor to meet one of the 10 great magicians on the continent."

The fishing rod and bait that Lael prepared. He threw the fishing rod first.

"As you know, Sir Bland is currently secured by us."

Lael glanced over at the eight young knights and Bland stepped forward from beside them.

"Father..."

"Bland!"

Earl Ashur's eyes trembled. Lael didn't miss his agitation and immediately tried to negotiate.

"The one who killed 1st Prince Ren wasn't Duke Grid, but King Aslan. He killed his older brother and placed all his sins on Duke Grid. The truth will be proven by Bland."

"What...?"

Earl Ashur's face filled with confusion as Lael continued.

"Earl Ashur has no obligation to be loyal to the royal family that has lost its legitimacy. Come join Duke Grid. Duke Grid will dispose of the false royal family that deceived you and will give you greater honor and power than before... Urgh."

Lael let out a groan of pain and stumbled. It was because a dagger had flown without a sound and pierced his chest.

"What?"

"Protect Earl Lael!"

The eight knights hurriedly ran to where Lael and Bland were standing. Then something dropped from the high walls. It was a robed man. The 9th knight of the Saharan Empire's Red Knights. A solo number knight who could destroy a city by himself. He pulled out a strange Y-shaped blade and made it at lightning fast speed.

Chaeeeeeng!

"Ugh."

“Keok.”

The eight young knights selected and trained by Piaro and Asmophel were defeated in an instant. They couldn't even follow the robed man's sword. A serious injury was dealt and they barely survived.

“E-Earl Lauel...!”

The eight knights screamed. Lauel was paralyzed by the poisoned dagger. In no time, the robed man reached him and swung his sword.

“Fast!”

All the Overgeared members running from the rear of the army were shocked. The swordsmanship was so amazing that Faker, Pon, and Regas became nervous. What about Lauel, who was the target?

‘I’m dead!’

This was bad. He never thought that such a monster would be hiding in Patrian.

‘Why am I always weak when it comes to variables?’

Lauel scolded his lacking qualities and closed his eyes.

Chaaeng!

A pebble came flying from Reidan's troops and stopped the sword of the solo number knight.

“?!”

A man hiding among the soldiers! A chill went down the spine of the solo number knight.

Chapter 504

Only 19 seconds. That was the time it took for the solo number knight to jump from the wall, get through the eight young knights, and reach Lael.

Syuk!

The Y-shaped sword flashed towards Lael's neck. Fast. Lael's death seemed inevitable. But Lael lived. A pebble came flying from Reidan's troops and stopped the sword of the solo number knight.

'Unbelievable!'

A solo number knight. They referred to the top nine of the Red Knights, the strongest people on the continent. It was evaluated that their strength was higher than Piaro, the former leader of the Red Knights. It was because all the Red Knights of the present day had accomplished the status of great swordsman.

The 9th knight, Nautilus, couldn't believe it after his sword was blocked by a stone.

'A person who can throw a stone that can block my sword exists?'

It was also in a small kingdom?

'Duke Grid?'

No, Nautilus had already penetrated through Grid's skills and talent. He had watched from afar during the war with Prince Ren and fully understood Grid's fighting skills. He was strong, but a few levels below Nautilus. Grid wouldn't be able to reach this level even if he trained all his life. If that was the case?

'It can't be... Piaro?'

There was information that the last place the traitor hid was the Eternal Kingdom. It was possible that this was Piaro.

'No, no. It isn't Piaro.'

Piario hadn't been capable of this in his prime. He couldn't stop Nautilus' sword with a stone when his skills had fallen far below what it was in the past.

'Who is it?'

1 second. Nautilus was feeling confused.

"Lauel. Protect."

Jude arrived and swung the +8 Dainsleif (Reproduction). The black sword fell towards Nautilus' head like a lightning bolt.

Chaaeng!

"Kuk!"

Nautilus' arms and legs shook when he collided with Jude's sword.

'What is this strength?'

It wasn't simply high muscular strength. The person in front of him seemed to have learned how to exert double or triple his actual strength.

Kwang!

Kwa kwang!

Nautilus realized as he defended against two more strikes from Jude.

'He isn't afraid of death.'

He seemed to have 10 lives. This person didn't care about being hit by a counterattack or his own well-being. He just wielded the sword in order to destroy the enemy. It was more intense and threatening because the opponent was an animal that acted through instincts.

'Is he from Durima?'

They were a crazy clan that raised puppets who only knew how to kill with weapons.

‘Anyway, he’s weak.’

Nautilus regained his coolness, avoided Jude’s diagonal slash by bending his knees, then he stabbed his sword upwards.

Seokeok!

A white aura sprang out and caused a deep wound on Jude’s thick chest. Nautilus jumped into the air and stabbed his sword in Jude’s shoulder.

“Ouch. It hurts.”

“Jude!”

The Overgeared members running from the rear were worried. They were concerned about Jude dying, but it wasn’t easy to move through the gaps between 3,000 soldiers. Faker stepped lightly on the soldiers’ head and was the fastest. However, he was still far away.

“This is the end.”

The moment that Nautilus’ sword aimed at Jude’s head.

Chaaeng!

Once again, a stone blocked Nautilus’ sword.

“Crazy...!”

It was like a ghost. Nautilus paled and hurriedly shouted to Earl Ashur on the wall.

“Command the army to attack! I will rescue Bland in that gap!”

‘Don’t listen to Lael’s words and end the war as quickly as possible.’

Nautilus felt desperate because he feared the unidentified enemy, but Earl Ashur was a clever man. He thought first instead of acting rashly.

‘Does Grid get any benefits from killing Prince Ren?’

No. On the other hand, King Aslan obtained the kingdom with Prince Ren's death. It was too early to dismiss Lauel's claim that Aslan was behind Prince Ren's death as a false one.

'Besides, he said that Bland would testify...'

Was Grid really framed? Earl Ashur was taken aback by the thought.

'Bland is a hostage.'

He would've suffered terrible pain and humiliation while being held in Reidan. Earl Ashur couldn't believe Bland's words, as his body and soul might've been torn down. He might've been threatened in order to lie.

'My first priority is to rescue Bland. I will secure his safety and then discover the truth.'

Earl Ashur decided and finally issued a command.

"Shoot!"

Papat!

Pa pa pa pa pat!

The 2,000 archers on the walls fired simultaneously. Indeed, the archery abilities of the Patrian soldiers called the 'Heart of Eternal' were excellent. Thousands of arrows flew in a curve. However, Earl Ashur's magic was more surprising than the skill of the soldiers. All the arrows shot by the soldiers simultaneously gained the fire attribute and accelerated.

The Reidan soldiers panicked as the arrows poured down like meteors.

"Hiik...! B-Block!"

"Raise your shields!"

"If you want to live, hurry! We have to reunite with our families in Reidan!"

The idea of surviving raised the concentration of the soldiers. Thanks to the harsh training, Reidan's soldiers moved into rows and succeeded in blocking most of the

arrows with their shields. However, there were some people who were unlucky.

“Ack!”

"Ugh!"

The arrows penetrated through the gaps in the shields and struck the soldiers. Some died instantly, while others would be crippled for life.

“Leo! Franc!”

The soldiers cried out at the sight of their bleeding comrades. Desire to live once again filled their faces as they used the shields to block the enemy’s arrows.

Chaaeng!

Puk!

“Kyak!”

The battlefield filled with sharp screams and the sound of metal clashing was fierce and terrible. It was a pit of grief and anger. Asmophel held a shield and moved among the soldiers.

‘This is what soldiers on the battlefield sees...’

Asmophel was born a noble. He received a command role as soon as he entered the military. He always treated his soldiers with great care, despite the desire to win. However, this was the first time he had been in the position of a soldier. Did he enjoy it? It was awful. He didn’t know that war was so horrendous in the days when he was the commander who held tens of thousands of lives in his hand.

‘The important thing for soldiers isn’t the war or the compensation.’

It was only survival. They were the weak who were afraid of even one arrow. Asmophel was avoiding the flying arrows when he was hit by a shield that a soldier was setting up. His eyes widened as his nose became bloody. Beyond the shields, a large rock fired from the enemy’s catapult was falling.

“Uwaaaack!”

“R-Run away!”

The screams of the soldiers echoed as they tried to escape from the rock. They pushed other people away as they started to run, including Asmophel.

‘So far, I have only experienced a fraction of war.’

Now he knew.

‘Duke Grid called me a soldier so that I could experience the life of one.’

In fact, Grid never invited Asmophel to experience being a soldier. But whatever the case, Asmophel accepted it and a positive change occurred.

‘I will be a commander who knows the heart of the soldiers. I won’t forcibly sacrifice the soldiers. I will come up with a strategy to win the war with a minimum of sacrifices.’

But before that.

‘I have to perfectly perform the role of a soldier!’

Asmophel picked up a spear and threw it. It was towards the rock falling on his allies.

Kuwaaaaaang!

The spear shattered the rock in the air.

[Asmophel has acquired a new skill.]

[Asmophel has acquired a new skill.]

[Asmophel has acquired a new title.]



“Why is it so hard?”

“No matter how I shoot the arrows, they don’t die...”

On the walls, the Patrian soldiers gradually lost morale. It was because the equipment of Reidan’s soldiers were so hard that no matter how many arrows they fired, only a few casualties appeared.

“Soldiers are wearing armor that is normally for high ranking knights... Is Reidan that rich?”

“A desert city is rich? It’s proof that Reidan’s lord is taking care of the soldiers. Duke Grid cherishes the soldiers and gives them good armor.”

“Such a great master... I envy Reidan’s soldiers...”

Earl Ashur panicked as soon as morale started to rapidly deteriorate.

‘I must reverse the atmosphere.’

Borneo’s army was advancing towards the gate while Reidan’s soldiers performed the role of blocking the arrows.

Kung!

Kung!

The walls shook and the soldiers trembled in fear every time Borneo’s siege weapons slammed against the gate. In the end, Earl Ashur could no longer stand still. He would show them the value of a magician in a war!

“I will show the majesty of the 10 great magicians on the continent!”

Kurururung!

Earl Ashur’s voice spread through the battlefield as he started to chant a spell, causing the atmosphere to heat up quickly. It was the precursor to the mass destruction magic, Fire Storm. Lael recovered from his paralysis and hurriedly shouted to Bland.

“What are you doing right now? Go and stop your father!”

“...I can freely take action?”

Bland was baffled by Lauel’s words.

“Have I ever blocked your freedom?”

“...”

No more words were necessary. Bland used magic to fly through the sky. He cried out as he approached his father.

“Father! Listen to Earl Lauel!”

“...?!”

Earl Ashur’s eyes trembled. How could his son, a hostage, move freely on the battlefield?

‘Perhaps...! Maybe!’

Earl Ashur stopped the magic spell and Lauel asked from the ground.

“King Aslan killed Prince Ren and framed Duke Grid. If this is the truth, will you abandon Eternal’s royal family and serve Duke Grid?”

“I can feel betrayed by the Eternal Kingdom, but I don’t intend to serve Duke Grid. I don’t want to serve someone incompetent.”

Ssik!

Lauel smiled evilly and threw the bait. “So you will serve Grid if he is capable? Okay. I will immediately prove Grid’s capabilities.”

“...?”

It was like Lauel predicted his answer. He declared to the puzzled Earl Ashur.

“The fortified city Borneo of Gauss, which hasn’t been occupied for hundreds of years

by Eternal, will now fall.”

The moment he finished speaking. The Overgeared members that Lael placed in the rear started to target the 10,000 Borneo soldiers attacking the gate.

Pepepepeong!

The Borneo soldiers became panicked at the bombardment of magic and skills that dealt catastrophic damage.

“W-What is this?”

Marquis Valtin was in turmoil while Earl Ashur felt astonished. Lael properly explained the situation to them.

“The Eternal Kingdom and Gauss Kingdom will all fall into Duke Grid’s grasp.”

“...!”

The moment that Earl Ashur was shivering.

“Earl Ashur! Don’t be deceived! He’s telling lies!”

Nautilus belatedly cried out from where he was surrounded by Regas, Pon, and Faker. He painfully shook off the three men and threw himself at Lael. He hoped to kill Lael and somehow straighten out the confusion.

“Get lost!”

The enemy troops blocking the path were nothing. Dozens of soldiers were instantly slain as he reached Lael and struck.

Chaaeng!

Suddenly, one of the soldiers guarding Lael blocked Nautilus’ attack.

“Who are you?”

The soldier pointed a spear at Nautilus and stated.

“Private Ars.”

Chapter 505

“Private?”

Nautilus was stunned and asked again.

“You’re a soldier in the army?”

A soldier who called himself Ars. His eyes were the only thing that could be seen through the deep helmet and he shook his head.

“No.”

‘That’s right. I heard wrong...’

“I’m a private, not a soldier.” (TL: Unsure of this. It seems to be some type of word game in Korean)

“You crazy guy! Making puns!”

It didn’t matter what he called himself. The fact that he said he was a soldier was the problem. A soldier was strong enough to block the sword of the 9th ranked Red Knight? It was something that had never happened in the 41 years he lived.

“You’re deceiving me! I know that you are the one who stopped my sword twice before! Reveal your true identity! That is only polite!”

Nautilus threw a dagger as he shouted. It was the poisoned dagger that made Lauel paralyzed for a while. Private Ars drew a circle with his spear and blocked it. No, Asmophel clicked his tongue.

“You’re talking about politeness? How shameless.”

Asmophel’s discerning eyes could tell that this robed man was a knight. He was a knight that learned the swordsmanship of the Saharan Empire. In the old days, it was inconceivable that a Red Knight would use hidden throwing weapons. This was inconsistent with an honorable act.

‘The Red Knights have become corrupt.’

Asmophel smiled bitterly and mourned.

‘Indeed, the Red Knights are different than before.’

All the chivalrous knights had been framed by Empress Marie and were dead or scattered. The Red Knights of the present day only had the same name. Otherwise, it was a completely new organization with different tendencies.

‘Marie...’

The damn woman who killed all their families and friends!

‘On the day that Grid devours the Saharan Empire, I will surely take everything back... Heok.’

Asmophel shook his head as he fell into his thoughts.

‘Right now, I’m Private Ars.’

A private didn’t need to think about the empire’s empress. Most ordinary soldiers in the world didn’t even know the face or name of the empress! Asmophel took a deep breath and stuck to his current role as Nautilus flew towards him.

"Daring to think in front of me!"

Syuok!

Syuok!

Nautilus’ sword aimed for two points. The ends of the Y blade were only aimed for weak spots like the heart, throat, and eyes. The grains of sand that rose up were split in half every time.

‘Great skills.’

Regas, Pon, and Faker felt admiration. The level of the robed NPC was estimated to be at least 400. The strength of a fourth advancement class was overwhelming for the Overgeared members, who were still only in the third advancement. But the

Overgeared members were shocked by the soldier, not the robed man.

‘Why is a soldier so strong?’

Why did the soldier seem better than the robed man? Regas, Pon, and Faker were speechless when they heard Lauel’s call.

"How long are you going to stand there blankly? Go help the guild members destroy the Borneo army!"

“Y-Yes...”

The most threatening presence on the battlefield, the robed man, was being kept in check by a soldier. Thus, they could feel assured and do their roles well.

"Then who is that private?"

“Ars.”

"So who is Ars?"

“I don’t know.”

"Where did Grid pick up another named NPC?"

"In any case, Grid is great.”

The three men who misunderstood separated. On the other hand, the battle between Nautilus and Asmophel was becoming more intense.

Chaeeeeeng!

Nautilus’ sword moved at a fast pace while Asmophel focused on defending with his spear that had a wide range. The two people looked even. This was why Nautilus felt indignant.

“What? What’s your identity? How is someone like you hiding in a small kingdom?”

"Private Ars of Reidan.”

"Stop repeating the same bullshit! You're too strong to be a soldier! Reveal your true identity!!"

"No, any soldier can be as strong as me if they learn Reidan's spearsmanship."

Reidan's spearsmanship. It was something Asmophel had made after brainstorming with Piaro. All the soldiers of Reidan learned these techniques, which collected the merits of the 'Imperial Spearsmanship Style' that was passed down to only a handful of knights recognized by the Saharan Empire's court.

However, the difficulty level was high and not one soldier had learned it to a good level yet. Of course, Asmophel had a complete understanding of it.

"Reidan's Spearsmanship 2nd style. Dragon's Tail."

Peeng!

Asmophel swung the spear and a wave of energy shook Nautilus' cochlea.

"What?"

Nautilus lost his balance and barely defended against Asmophel's attack. Then his eyes widened. It was because Asmophel's spear, which was in contact with his sword, curved and stabbed at his neck.

'This is bad...!'

Puok!

"Keok!"

Blood emerged as Nautilus was stabbed lightly. In the meantime, he predicted Asmophel's movements and counterattacked. However, Asmophel was able to avoid him.

"You are forever dancing in the palm of my hand."

"Ugh."

If a passersby was grabbed and asked about the strongest knights on the continent,

they would all say the Red Knights. And among the Red Knights, Nautilus was the 9th strongest. Nautilus was confident that there were only around 30 people stronger than him on the continent. Yet he was being overpowered by a soldier of Reidan. It was also a private!

“How? Why is someone like you...?”

It was serious. He couldn't have the stigma of a 'solo number knight defeated by a soldier.' It was absurd. Nautilus decided to flee and used Aura Rage, threatening Asmophel by erupting aura everywhere, creating a sand storm.

‘Use this gap to escape... Heok!’

Nautilus believed that he'd disturbed Asmophel's view and ran away.

"It's strange for a Red Knight to show his back. Originally, a Red Knight should have the instinct to ignore the limit and exceed it if they meet a stronger opponent. You're actually like this?"

That damn voice was heard right above his head?

‘How did he escape from the bombardment of Aura Rage?’

A chill went down Nautilus' spine as Asmophel stabbed his spear several times.

Papang!

Papapapang!

One, twice, three times, four times, ten times! Continue, continue, continue! Continue!

Puuooooook!

"Kuoooak!" Shit! Shitt!"

Nautilus tried to cope with the ruthless bombardment that was pouring down on him, but Asmosphel was too fast. Nautilus was constantly battered despite his resistance.

"Reidan's Spearmanship 3rd style."

Kurururu!

The spear stabbing and piercing Nautilus' body became surrounded by a golden light. It was the precursor to the peak technique of Reidan's spearmanship, Splitting the Seven Seas.

"Golden aura...? This is ridiculoussss!"

Nautilus whitened as the spear led to a storm of golden aura. He was afraid that his identity would be exposed and didn't wear the Red Armor, the symbol of the Red Knights. Now he felt disappointed and helpless by this fact.

Puooook!

The golden-colored spear split Nautilus' chest in half.

"Kuaaaack!"

Nautilus suffered catastrophic damage and collapsed. He belatedly thought. 'Yes, this is the best spearman on the continent... '

Kirinus! That monster was hiding among Reidan's soldiers!

'I would've had a chance if I wore the Red Armor... Too bad... '

Nautilus turned to grey. He never knew. Asmophel wasn't Kirinus, and his swordsmanship was much better than his spear techniques.



"Whoa..."

"A-Amazing."

The Reidan soldiers witnessed how an ordinary private (?) defeated the enemy. They obtained new hopes and dreams. If they kept working hard on Reidan's spearmanship, they could one day be strong like Private Ars? The morale of the Reidan soldiers rose and Lael issued a timely order.

"Full force! Rush and hit Borneo! And I will promote Private Ars to a Private First Class

right now!"

"Waaahhhhhhhh!"

The prize might seem a bit low since Ars defeated an enemy that no one else could stop, but this was the unfortunate treatment of commoner soldiers. Since there was a private first class who could perform the role of 50 people, it was relatively easy to advance.

'Let's earn achievements like Ars!'

The soldiers of Reidan burned with desire and attacked Borneo. After a while. Lael whispered to Ars as they were left in the rear.

"I didn't even dream that you would be Asmophel."

"I'm Private Ars."

Asmophel tried to conceal his identity, but he couldn't deceive Lael's eyes.

"Huhut, you don't need to hide your identity from me. I can guess your reason behind becoming a soldier. Is it to give encouragement to the soldiers so that they can train better? Always thinking about developing the army... Truly a great commander. You're someone who is hard to fully grasp, like Grid and Piaro. Kukuk."

"...?"

Lael's interpretation made Asmophel embarrassed. He tried to deny it by repeating the same words.

"I'm Private Ars."

"Haha! Understood. Please continue to act as a soldier in the future. Private First Class Ars."

Asmophel said again to the smiling Lael. "I'm Private Ars."

"...Do you have a fetish with being a private?"

"I should start from the beginning instead of getting the role of a private first class."

He wanted to experience everything about being a soldier. Therefore, he refused. Lael was delighted by Asmophel's strong will.

'I can reduce our financial expenditure.'

There was a big difference between a private and a private first class. Since Asmophel received a salary as the captain of the Overgeared Magic Knights division, it was a waste to pay him the salary of a private first class as well.

"It's good that Ars has this private disease."

The Saharan Empire's solo number knight. He was killed by a soldier of Reidan. Unfortunately, this news was quietly buried. No one except for King Aslan and Asmophel knew that Nautilus was a solo number knight.

The next day at dawn. The long and intense battle ended. Borneo's 10,000 troops were defeated by Reidan's 3,000 troops. The members of Overgeared were active, but the crucial difference between the Borneo and Reidan soldiers were their items. The Borneo soldiers couldn't go against the mass production Grid set that the legendary blacksmith Grid that every 1 in 10 soldiers had. There was also the activities of Private Ars.

At the same time, the vampire city.

"The vampires are simple to handle using this method. Just have the God Hands hit them with Mjolnir. How is it? Simple right? The viewers can try it as well."

"..."

Grid was fooling viewers around the world. It wasn't intentional, but it was unavoidable. The viewers became confused by Grid's explanation.

Chapter 506

Using the God Hands wielding Mjolnir to hunt the vampires and gain experience! The viewers showed a variety of responses after learning Grid's secret.

-What should I do if I don't have the God Hands and Mjolnir?

-Buy a hammer with divine power.

-Even if you hit them with a hammer with divine power, will the vampires really die so easily?

-It's only possible with the God Hands.

Some people took Grid's levelling secret seriously while others just enjoyed it.

-Ah, what is this? I watched the broadcast to learn how to raise my level quickly like Grid, only to get nothing.

-Tsk~ I could've been playing the game during this broadcast time.

Some people grumbled. But few people directly criticized Grid. In the first place, Grid wasn't obliged to reveal the secret behind his levelling. It was a position where people couldn't complain, even if they couldn't get any help from Grid's broadcast. Most people were happy and thankful that Grid appeared on air to resolve their questions. Grid might be ridiculed, but his popularity was real.

However, OGC Announcer Park Shinye felt somewhat uneasy.

How to hunt like Grid. She was worried that the ordinary players couldn't follow Grid's actions and the audience ratings would fall. In the end, she used the interim advertising time to speak to Grid.

"Youngwoo-ssi, can't your attitude be more serious? Shouldn't you do your best to satisfy the viewers of the broadcast?"

"Serious attitude?"

Grid became confused where he was sitting and resting.

“Aren’t I being serious?”

His role was to show the viewers how he hunted and he stuck to this role. What was the problem? Park Shinye explained to the puzzled Grid. “You need to make the viewers feel that it is worthwhile watching this. For example, when catching a vampire, explain the weakness of the vampire in detail...”

Grid frowned.

“Why should I?”

Did he need to be that kind? If OGC had asked him for such a role from the beginning, he would’ve declined to appear. Grid disliked the fact that Park Shinye was making demands for things that weren’t in the contract. His negative reaction stimulated Park Shinye.

“Youngwoo-ssi, you don’t have the attitude of a professional. I heard that you received 20 billion won in exchange for appearing on this broadcast. Shouldn’t you at least be aware of the value of that money?”

“The value of the money? I think this is enough.”

Grid was well aware that broadcasting stations weren’t charities. He could easily guess that OGC had already earned over 20 billion won revenue from this broadcast.

“Hey Shinye, what are you doing all of a sudden?”

“Relax. Don’t make a fuss.”

The moment that the OGC staff were trying to stop Park Shinye.

“The smell of humans!”

“Delicious. Prey has arrived after a long time.”

The vampires sensed it as Grid’s party became lively and flocked.

“They showed up again.”

"Withdraw to the rear."

The broadcasting staff who were initially afraid of the vampires were now calm. They weren't nervous because they knew that Grid could easily handle the vampires. However.

"W-What are you doing?"

Grid didn't get up, despite the vampires approaching. He just sat and waited. The broadcasting staff belated noticed this strangeness and became anxious. In particular, Park Shinye urged Grid.

"Youngwoo-ssi! Get rid of the vampires! Everybody will die like this!"

Her shouts were useless. Grid stayed still until the end and the staff were eventually attacked.

"Kyaaak!"

Park Shinye was dressed conspicuously and became the first target. She was pierced by the vampire's nails and bitten on the neck, dying instantly. Then Grid rose.

"Phew, good riddance."

There was a refreshed smile on Grid's face! Bunny Bunny gulped as he watched Grid command the God Hands and start hitting the vampires.

'I should be careful.'

He had noticed it a long time ago, but Grid didn't have a nice personality. He knew how to treat the people around him well and wasn't rude, but he was never nice or innocent. It was important not to forget this.



The fortified city, Patrian.

"You lowly and wicked man! Stabbing your allies in the back! You have no honor or goodness! If today's incident is known to the world, Duke Grid's reputation will fall to the bottom!"

Marquis Valtin shouted at Lael while being tied up. It was against common sense to betray and attack allies during a war. There were few such incidents in the whole continent. Marquis Valtin thought Lael was the worst person.

Lael acknowledged this fact. "Indeed. If this is known to the world, I will be stigmatized as the worst trash and Grid's credibility will also fall. No one will trust Reidan again, and we will be isolated both economically and with the military."

"Then you understand! The only thing waiting for you is ruin! You were blinded by the immediate benefits and have made an irreversible mistake! There's no future for you!"

"..."

Lael fell silent. He couldn't refute Marquis Valtin's words. The Overgeared members were agitated.

"Isn't this situation serious?"

"It's serious. The other forces won't sit idly by after this incident. The concept of an alliance is to be trustworthy, so the wave caused by this will be big."

"What are we going to do now?"

"As Marquis Valtin says, the future won't be smooth."

"Wow... Then we should cover it up as much as possible to prevent the world knowing that we stabbed Borneo in the back."

"How can we conceal an incident where tens of thousands of people were present?"

"Eh... Then are we ruined?"

Ssik.

Marquis Valtin smiled with satisfaction when he saw the agitated Overgeared members.

"Free me and my army right away. This is an opportunity to make up for your mistake!"

According to the common law, killing enemy nobles captured during a war was

prohibited. It was resolved after receiving money. The liberation period was normally delayed as much as possible, but Marquis Valtin was convinced.

‘They have to release me now.’

They would want to escape from the worst situation. However, it was already too late. ‘You will never be forgiven!’ Once he returned to Gauss, he would immediately find the king and urge for an alliance with Eternal.

‘I will make an alliance with Eternal and punish all of you!’

Lauel smiled awkwardly at Marquis Valtin. "I'm sorry, but I can't release you. Now that I have done this, I won't be able to regain the trust that has been lost. I can't risk freeing you when you will become a greater enemy in the future."

“What are you saying? Don't you know that the common law is not to kill captive nobles?”

"I'm aware of that. So I have to manipulate the truth. Uhh, well. Marquis Valtin was hit by an arrow on the battlefield and died."

“Don't make me laugh! The 3,000 Borneo soldiers who survived are my witnesses! My soldiers will attest that you executed me!”

Borneo was forced to surrender in the late afternoon, resulting in 3,000 troops still surviving. Behind the tied up Marquis Valtin were 3,000 soldiers kneeling down, their weapons thrown away. Lauel acted like he didn't understand Marquis Valtin's confident words.

“Where are the 3,000 soldiers? All 10,000 Borneo troops were wiped out in the war.”

“What...?”

Marquis Valtin's heart sank. The Overgeared members were also shocked.

“L-Lauel, do you mean to kill all of them?”

Lauel nodded easily at the whisper of the Overgeared members.

“Yes.”

“What?”

Even if they were NPCs, they were still alive. It was also 3,000 lives! It was terrible to kill 3,000 soldiers who had already declared surrender. Lael looked indifferently at the rejection from some of the Overgeared members.

"It's difficult to gain power if you aren't evil. Those who behave justly are always bound to receive damage."

"..."

"Execute all 3,153 Borneo soldiers, including Marquis Valtin. The execution will be carried out by Reidan's soldiers. Raise the level of the soldiers."

Some people would accuse him of being a demon and some wouldn't want to look at him. But Lael didn't care. He wasn't part of the Overgeared Guild to play around. Marquis Valtin shook at his emotionless face and shouted, "I wonder if you can cover the sky! The evil you committed today will eventually be revealed and will lead to Duke Grid's destruction!"

Lael laughed as he imagined it.

"No, Duke Grid will be extraordinary. I will block and overcome everything that gets in his way, no matter the trials."

Lael foresaw this from the time he planned to take over Borneo to acquire Earl Ashur. The fate of Overgeared was to be isolated. Nevertheless, it was inevitable for his plan. What if they didn't ally with Borneo and occupied Patrian with their own power? They would still be stigmatized as 'those who betrayed the kingdom.'

'Since we are going to be isolated no matter what, it's better to get as many benefits as possible.'

Independence. The power of Overgeared, his brains and the forces of Marquis Steim and Earl Ashur would be their foothold!

'It doesn't matter if other kingdoms don't acknowledge us to the end and are hostile.'

Break through this with force. Lael pledged as Marquis Valtin and 3,153 Borneo troops were executed. Then he received a new title.

[You have caused a massacre using the pretext of war. You have become an object of hatred to an unspecified number of people. On the other hand, you will also have enthusiastic followers.]

[The title 'Wise Villain' has been acquired!]

[The stat 'political power' will be opened due to the title effect.]

[Political power has increased by 500.]

[Attack power and magic power will slightly increase due to the title effect.]

[You have gained the skill 'Madness' as a result of the title effect.]

[You have gained the skill 'Harsh Tax Levy' as a result of the title effect.]

[You have gained the skill 'Merciless Commands' as a result of the title effect.]

"This, this... I received great strength at the cost of sad slaughter. Look forward to the future of the dark shadow Lael, who will be responsible for the darkness of Overgeared..."

"..."

The Overgeared members were worried about Lael's increasingly serious illness.

Chapter 507

“...Now I see.”

Earl Ashur realized as he watched Lauel execute all the prisoners of the Borneo army.

"The reason why the greedy and stupid Grid is able to solidify his position is due to this person."

Lauel used the alliance with the Borneo army to not just occupy Patrian. He deserved to be accused, but it couldn't be denied that he was excellent. Choosing the cruel means in order to achieve better results was especially great. Could Grid come up to his current position if it wasn't for this person?

'It wouldn't have been possible.'

Earl Ashur denied it with certainty, making Bland speak.

"Father, with all due respect, Duke Grid isn't incompetent. It's true that Earl Lauel's achievements are big, but his actions would be limited if Duke Grid was incompetent."

“...?”

Earl Ashur felt that his son was strange after reuniting after two years. Bland had a bad relationship with Grid and was also held hostage by Grid, yet he acknowledged Grid?

'Grid even took Irene from him. Now there are no grudges in his eyes...?'

Bland seemed to be brainwashed. How was he tortured? It was truly horrible. Earl Ashur made a heartbroken expression while Bland smiled brightly.

"Father, it's nothing like you are imagining. I have been enjoying life in Reidan."

“Bland?”

Earl Ashur was surprised. His son Bland could smile so brightly again after losing his

mother and brother? After Irene married Grid, this kid definitely should be darker and more pained!

"What is life like in Reidan that you can make such a bright face?"

Bland told the truth to the confused Earl Ashur.

"Field work."

"W-What?"

"I eat potatoes every day."

"What?!!!"

Earl Ashur was furious. His precious son, a noble of Eternal, had to work in the fields like a serf? He was even eating potatoes like a pig! He had been living this hellish life!

"Ahh! Bland! You've gone mad at the end of your life!" Earl Ashur lamented and hugged Bland. "I'm sorry! Your life was ruined due to this foolish father!" *Sob sob.*

Bland handed a boiled potato to Earl Ashur who was weeping. A rainbow colored potato.

"I'm not going to speak any longer. Eat this potato. Your misunderstanding will be wiped out the moment you taste this."

"This..."

His son was crazy. What son would invite his father to eat the same pig food? Earl Ashur lamented. Bland determined there would be no progress in this conversation and acted. He shoved the rainbow potato into his father's mouth.

"Heok!"

Earl Ashur's eyes shone as the pig food entered his mouth.

'W-What is this?'

It was a new world. The shock and pleasure that was comparable to opening a new

mana circle caused him to be stunned. As soon as it was inserted in his mouth, it melted and the taste was sweet, salty, spicy, sour, and refreshing. It was as if all the delicacies in the world were concentrated in one potato.

Bland spoke excitedly to the shocked Earl Ashur. "Isn't it delicious?"

"Delicious! What?" Earl Ashur was agitated. "How can you express this precious delicacy with just delicious!? Yes! A heavenly flavor! The food of the gods!!"

"..."

Blood was truly thick. Bland and Earl Ashur even had the same taste buds. Either way, it was the birth of a new potato maniac.



"Will you serve Duke Grid?" Lael arranged the situation and talked to Earl Ashur.

Earl Ashur spoke in a blunt manner with a potato in his mouth. "What are you planning to do in the future? Duke Grid will become hostile to both Eternal and Gauss. It is doubtful that Duke Grid can withstand the pincer attacks of two kingdoms, even with the protection of Marquis Steim."

Lael raised three fingers. "There is a part you are overlooking. The countries we will become hostile to in this war aren't just Eternal and Gauss, but the Saharan Empire as well."

"The empire?"

The power of the Saharan Empire, the real rulers of the continent, was overwhelming. They had over one million soldiers and the number of knights was close to 3,000. There were several great magicians as outstanding as Earl Ashur. In other words, it was an absolute powerhouse. Becoming hostile to the empire would lead to ruin.

"Why would you be hostile to the empire?"

Lael explained to Earl Ashur with a firm expression.

"The Saharan Empire is behind King Aslan."

Many circumstantial things prove the cooperation between King Aslan and the Saharan Empire. Lauel was convinced there was a relationship with the empire not long after Aslan was crowned.

Earl Ashur thought silently and nodded. "That reminds me... Recently, the relationship with the empire is changing little by little. The policies have started to become favorable towards the empire? They seemed so trivial that I and the others were negligent."

It was murky.

"Will there be a future for Duke Grid after becoming hostile to the empire? Won't I just die a dog death if I serve him?"

"No, there's no need to worry. The empire currently has their army scattered due to insurgents in the south. It's hard to get involved in matters of the north. I'm certain that there will be no direct conflict with the empire for the next two years. In the first place, King Aslan won't send a request for support to the empire."

Eternal had a very strong pride as a neutral kingdom. They might have to give a tribute to the empire, but there were few kingdoms with full autonomy like Eternal. What if it was known that King Aslan borrowed the power of the empire in order to be crowned, and in return, implemented policies favorable to the empire? King Aslan's position would be weakened and it might be the moment when the power of Prince Ren's faction would be revealed.

Lauel came to the conclusion that King Aslan couldn't announce his relationship with the empire.

"...You're a person who can read the situation of the whole continent and use it."

"Isn't this the basics?"

"It isn't something that anyone can afford."

Earl Ashur thought about it for a moment.

"Okay. I'm someone who can't return to Eternal already. My base is too weak to build an independent force. I will serve Duke Grid. However, I expect high treatment."

"They are fair words. You're one of the 10 great magicians on the continent. Just..." Lauel gave a friendly smile. Then he spoke to Earl Ashur with a gentle expression. "Always remember that your only mission is to serve Duke Grid. It's unacceptable if you hold a sword to his neck."

"I know."

Earl Ashur was curious. How much had Grid grown to be able to make talented people like this serve him?

'I want to see it.'

His grudge against Grid disappeared the moment he learned that Bland had been living a healthy and happy life. Earl Ashur was full of expectations when he suddenly had a question.

"Where is Duke Grid now?"

The war against Patrian was an important event that would determine Reidan's future destiny. Yet Grid hadn't been seen at all during the war. How could he be away during such an important moment?

Lauel replied. "Duke Grid is currently hunting."

"...?"

Earl Ashur doubted his ears for a moment before becoming convinced.

"Ah, that's right. He is struggling alone to defend his territory against those who threaten it?"

"Well... Something similar."

Grid's growth was the absolute weapon. The stronger Grid became, the stronger Overgeared was. But Lauel allowed Earl Ashur to interpret it as he wished. Lauel made a warm expression and sent a whisper to Faker.

-The road to the north is finally opened. As scheduled, go to Marquis Steim and tell him about Grid's independence.

The moment that Marquis Steim promised to serve Grid.

-We will make Grid a king.

Right now, no big changes could be made if Grid became king. Grid's kingdom would suffer, surrounded on three sides by the Eternal Kingdom, the Gauss Kingdom and the Saharan Empire. In the worst case, it could quickly fall. But Lael didn't care. There was only one reason. He wanted to give Grid the title of 'First King.'

'I can't give it to Ares.'

He bet it was a legendary rated title. Lael speculated that the effect would be much better than Kingdom's Hero.



"Patrian has been taken?"

"It isn't just that. Earl Ashur has committed betrayal and joined Duke Grid."

"T-This..."

The capital of the Eternal Kingdom, Reinhardt. King Aslan never dreamt that Patrian would collapse, and he sat down without any strength. He stared into the air for a moment before asking.

"W-Where is the knight I sent to Earl Ashur?"

"He was killed during the war. He was also defeated by a soldier of Reidan."

Why did he send a knight that was weaker than a soldier as reinforcement? The questioning eyes of the people present stabbed at King Aslan.

Aslan was confused. 'A soldier defeated a solo number knight?'

It couldn't be. The news must be distorted. Aslan was sure of it.

'Duke Grid learned that Nautilus was a Red Knight and took care of it.'

He pretended to be as soldier in order to kill the Red Knight.

‘The empire can’t reveal that Nautilus is a solo number knight. They can’t make a big issue against Grid.’

From the empire’s perspective, how could they announce that one of the solo number knights they were so proud of was killed by a soldier? No. In order to avoid embarrassment, Nautilus couldn’t be revealed.

‘Duke Grid...’

He was scarier and more clever than imagined. That’s right. King Aslan could never imagine. Grid wasn’t involved in this incident at all. Perhaps it wouldn’t be strange for Grid to not participate in future wars. Lael was hoping for Grid’s infinite growth. Whether the Overgeared members went to war or a kingdom was established. Lael desired for Grid to focus on solo play.

‘Like Agnus.’

Agnus had a guild of necromancer rankers under him. He played solo while his forces gained honor and glory for him. Why couldn’t others do the same thing? Lael had a rivalry with Veradin, Agnus’ chief of staff. He aimed to give Grid more comfort and glory than Agnus.

It was the beginning of the ‘Grid: Emperor of the World’ project.

Chapter 508

After annihilating Borneo's army and absorbing Patrian, Lauel took control of Borneo and looked at a map of Eternal.

"By conquering Patrian, we have succeeded in completely connecting the north and the west. From now on, we'll use the resources produced in the north to defend against the empire's invasion based on Reidan, the Eternal Kingdom's invasion based on Patrian, and the Gauss Kingdom's invasion based on Borneo."

Reidan, Patrian, and Borneo were able to form a triangular defense zone. The disadvantage of having to disperse their troops was created, but there was the tremendous advantage of not having to worry about their rear.

'Looking at the current situation, we'll be able to hold on for the next two years. If we hold on, there's a chance to counterattack.'

The problem was Cork Island, separated from the southern part of the Eternal Kingdom by the sea. It was impossible to protect it. Lauel made a painful decision.

"...Give up Cork Island. Please have all the members residing there return to Reidan."

Peak Sword fiercely argued against it. "Cork Island is the territory that the Silver Knights Guild won after a fierce battle! We can't give it up so easily!"

Toban spoke carefully. "Cork Island has a high profit as a tourist destination and has 23 mines. It's the territory with the highest value, so it's hard to obediently give it up."

Lauel replied coolly. "But what can we do? It's impossible to spare resources and forces for Cork Island."

Lauel also felt regret that they had to give it up. It would be a lingering regret. But he needed to make a realistic decision. He couldn't be emotional like Peak Sword or express an opinion without a solution like Toban. Lauel had the responsibility of being Grid's representative.

"Cork Island won't be able to last long against an offensive from Eternal. It's better to

not be obsessed with it and give it up instead of receiving huge damages.”

Lauel showed an objective judgment, but Peak Sword declared.

“I will go to Cork Island. I’ll protect it for as long as I can. Just give me permission to take 10 guild members from the Silver Knights. I’m well aware of the lacking manpower, but please do me this favor. I will make sure that you benefit from this.”

“...”

Peak Sword’s skills were among the top in Overgeared. He didn’t perform well in the National Competition. However, it was inevitable due to the nature of his class. Looking at simple combat ability, he was just below Regas and Pon, and his leadership was better than theirs.

“...If you have the Silver Knights members, you will be able to extend the time it takes for Cork Island to be occupied.”

The limit was probably one or two months. The resources and taxes from those two months would certainly be a great help to Overgeared. But Lauel thought the damage was larger than the benefits.

“Peak Sword, Cork Island doesn’t have any monsters suitable for third advancement classes to hunt. Your growth during your stay there will be stagnant. In the long run, this will be a huge loss of power for Overgeared. Thus, I can’t send you...”

“No, I can grow without hunting.” Peak Sword interrupted Lauel’s words with a hoe. No, it was a pickaxe. “I will stay in the mines when I’m not defending the island.”

Steady labor would raise his mining skill as well as his stats. He would become stronger little by little. They could also obtain ores there.

“Cork Island is a special territory for me. It resembles Dokdo. So Lauel, please sent me to Cork Island. I will protect it as long as possible.”

He was prepared to die many times. One month, two months. No, he would secure funds for Overgeared by defending Cork Island for three or four months. Lauel finally gave up when he saw the flames burning in Peak Sword’s eyes.

“I understand. Your stubbornness is comparable to Grid’s and I can’t break it.”

Were all Korean people like this? Lael laughed at the thought. A gentle smile that couldn't be seen when confronting the enemy spread across his face.

"Peak Sword, I will believe in you."

Lael personally liked Peak Sword. A person with persistence and a noble mind, he closely resembled Grid.

"Stay as long as possible on Cork Island."

Peak Sword respectfully rose from his seat and said to Lael.

"I will hold it and collect resources for the guild warehouse."

Peak Sword moved quickly. He left Borneo for Cork Island on that day. He had 10 elite members of the Silver Knights with him. There was a pickaxe in the corner of their inventories.

After that. Lael dispersed the Overgeared members between Reidan, Patrian, and Borneo, telling them their top priorities.

"Always be prepared for war and concentrate on levelling up. Spend all the assets you've collected on potions and just keep hunting."

Lael would stay in Reidan. He placed the safety of Duchess Irene and Lord as his top priority.



"Finally, it's starting."

King of Shadows, Kasim. Immediately after Lord was born, Kasim stayed by his side and taught him Lantier's techniques. Therefore, he heard when Reidan became hostile to the Saharan Empire. He looked at the residents and soldiers of Reidan who were preparing for war.

"Don't be afraid. My shadows will embrace you."

The Nero who had been destroyed by the empire. As the last survivor of the Nero, Kasim's hatred for the empire was great. Lord spoke to the man who was burning with

the desire for vengeance.

"Teacher, control your breathing. Assassins must manage their emotions."

"Hah... Haha, yes. I made a big mistake because I'm still lacking."

Kasim controlled his heart and was thrilled to see how Lord was growing.

Sururuk.

Kasim disappeared into the darkness.

"Young Nobleman Lord, it's time to study."

Sticks visited Lord. Lord's response wasn't good.

"Are we studying great demons today?"

"Yes, the great demons are the enemies of all species on this earth. It's natural for you to acquire information about the great demons in advance, since you will be ruling over many humans in the future."

"I don't like great demons."

Lord, who had advised Kasim just a while ago to manage his emotions, wasn't controlling his emotions at all. He pouted and started complaining. Even a continent-level genius couldn't control his emotions when he was still under four years old.

"I hate talking about great demons. It's scary. Let's study something else. Yes~? Teacher?"

Lord's innocent facial features were combined with his begging eyes. The child had a lovely appearance that combined the merits of his mother and father, causing Sticks to feel a strong pain in his heart.

'Ugh... So cute.'

Maybe it was because he almost died from a heart attack previously. Sticks breathed roughly to ease the pain of his heart and stroked Lord's head.

"Young Nobleman Lord, you have to learn it because you hate it."

"..."

It was somewhat philosophical. Grid wouldn't have understood what it meant, but his young son did. He focused his mind on Sticks' lecture.

[You have gained new knowledge. You have acquired the ability to detect weaknesses in some low-grade demonkin.]

[You have gained new knowledge. Dark magic evasion and defense has increased.]

Sticks' vast knowledge was gradually passed down to Lord. The combination of a genius student and a mentor with close to infinite knowledge was producing great results.



"Why is Bunny Bunny broadcasting with OGC? Where did Park Shinye go?"

After the end of the advertising break. The broadcast of Grid's hunt resumed and the viewers were confused. It was because OGC's announcer, Park Shinye disappeared without a trace. What happened during the 10 minutes when ads were playing? The viewers questioned it and Park Shinye felt confident.

'Grid, don't you know how popular I am?'

As an announcer representing OGC, she had countless fans. After the truth was revealed, her fans would accuse Grid. She was confident that Grid would lose some popularity. Unfortunately, people's concerns about her didn't last long. Finally, the final boss of the vampire city appeared. Everyone's attention focused on Grid and the boss. From the beginning, Park Shinye's existence was infinitely weak in front of Grid.

『Kukukuk! I am a true blood kindred! Vampire Viscount Steg!』

The vampire descended with a bloody energy around him. His force wasn't a joke. An

overwhelming feeling was being emitted by his shining eyes and dark trident. This was like the dignity of a king. He seemed much stronger than the drake that appeared in the National Competition. It seemed impossible for Grid to raid him alone. But Grid was stronger than he was during the National Competition and he had something that made the vampires much weaker than drakes.

Peok! Peok peok peok!

"Heeeeeek!"

The God Hands wielded Mjolnir and caused infinite stiffness! Steg wasn't able to resist and died, while Grid gave advice to the viewers.

『A sub-boss can't resist CC with a short duration like stiffness. It's simple to raid them after causing infinite stiffness.』

"..."

No, what did he mean by infinite stiffness? The viewers started to become heated. Grid, Bunny Bunny, and the OGC staff succeeded in leaving the vampire city. At this moment, Grid's hunting broadcast stopped. Grid reached level 317 and turned to a new hunting ground.

‘The East Continent.’

He was planning to follow the footsteps of Kraugel, who had held the number one ranking with his overwhelming levelling speed. His ultimate goal was to get ahead.

‘I will make you go after me.’

Grid's motivation shot up. He always set a new goal so that he wouldn't become stagnant.

Chapter 509

Snore. Snore...

Lord practiced his assassin skills every morning and every night. But nobody knew this fact. Kasim's presence itself was a secret.

"Uhuh! Young Nobleman Lord, are you sleeping in class?"

He didn't know that Lord had been training all of last night and this morning. Sticks smiled bitterly as Lord started dozing off during the second half of the lecture.

'He might be a genius that represents the continent, but he's still a child... He's lacking concentration and stamina.'

Sticks didn't intent to reduce the lecture time, despite knowing this. Sticks wanted to teach Lord more and more.

"Young Nobleman, if you feel tired then let's take a break for an hour before continuing the lessons. Rest your eyes for a moment."

"Uhhh... Yes."

Lord answered sleepily. He headed out into the beautiful garden where petals were swaying in the breeze. It was a garden that existed due to the past activities of the Overgeared members.

"Oh my? Lord, did today's class end early?"

"Kyaaaah! I'm happy! We can play a lot today!"

There were dozens of girls waiting for Lord in the garden. They were girls more beautiful than the flowers, each with a different personality.

"Ohh... It isn't over. A quick break. I'm going to sleep."

Lord yawned, headed into a girl's arms, and fell asleep straight away. The girls loved

this cute and loveable Lord. "Kukuk, so cute."

"Sleep well and grow up quickly, our Lord."

Some girls poked Lord's cheeks, others kissed him, and some hugged him. There were also girls who stroked his head. They were the Rebecca's Daughters candidates. They were Lord's girlfriends.

"Hah."

Vantner found Lord sleeping in the girls' arms and blinked.

'...I'm envious!'

He never thought that a child of Grid would be so beautiful and have so many pretty girls. Vantner angrily poked Lord in the side with a branch and ran away. After a while, he was caught by the girls chasing after him and beaten up.

"Any actions that threaten Lord are unforgivable, even if you're a member of Overgeared."

"Duke Grid himself asked this of us! We will take good care of Lord!"

"..."

Vantner, who failed in his 103rd blind date a few days ago, was miserable in both mind and body. He was frustrated for a while and belatedly realized something.

'Why are these kids so scary?'

Vantner had overlooked it, but the girls were strong. In the first place, they were taken to be Rebecca's Daughters because they were talented. Then after coming to Reidan, they received Piaro's training. The power of Reidan was much stronger than that of Overgeared.

One of the people who contributed to this rising power was Aura Master Hurent.

'By the way, Piaro didn't come again today?'

One day, Piaro had suddenly disappeared. Hurent had been disguised as an unnamed

serf and trained by Piaro for several months already. He was in a bad mood after Piaro disappeared.

‘Where did that guy suddenly disappear to?’

He wanted to ask people, but felt reluctant. He was worried that he would be thrown out by the Overgeared members if he was discovered. Hurent covered his face even more with the straw hat he received from Piaro and eventually started his field work again.

‘Come back soon. Until then, the fields that you cherish... No, I will defend these training grounds.’

Hurent followed the field work techniques that Piaro taught him in order to become stronger. At first, he thought of Piaro as an enemy. After the great teachings, he truly considered Piaro as a true benefactor and teacher. His desire for vengeance against Grid had disappeared a long time ago.

In the first place, it wasn't Grid's fault that he was disgraced after being defeated by Grid in five seconds. The result occurred because he was weak. He should focus on himself rather than feeling resentment towards Grid. However, if the opportunity came, he wanted to fight against Grid again. He would prove his strength.

It was a pure desire, different from his previous grudges.



[(Breaking News) Overgeared Guild captured Patrian and Borneo!]

The world was overturned. Patrian and Borneo. Few players knew the names of the territories in small kingdoms. But they were clearly strategically important points when looking at a map. The Overgeared Guild swallowed these territories in two days. The amazing fact was that it occurred when Grid was on air.

『I didn't know the power of Overgeared was this much. Taking two new territories without Grid... It was only one a few days ago. Isn't the master of Patrian one of the 10 great magicians, Earl Ashur?』

『It was possible because there was no Grid. There was a small number of players

inside Patrian and Borneo because everyone was busy watching Grid. This meant Overgeared had relatively easy access to the two territories. In other words, it was an important empty fort.』

『It's a strategy that Lael devised. He truly is a genius... It clearly shows the role of Overgeared's brain.』

『It isn't just Lael. There are many famous people in Overgeared. I appreciate Grid's ability to gather so many individuals that are hard to control and managing them.』

『I don't think Grid is lacking anything. He has high level combat ability, unique blacksmith skills, raid and hunting ability, the charm to attract talent, and the wisdom to use that talent in the right places. As for the leadership that raised the guild to be the best... Isn't this a perfect human being?』

『Having a charm that attracts people means his personality is also good... Actually, he's probably a very kind person. There's a reason why Grid is loved by the world's top beauties like Yura and Jishuka.』

People's misunderstandings deepened every day. They talked about a perfect person called Grid. And the experts started debating.

『Grid will probably become the first king.』

『It's likely. It is unclear how many territories are owned by third parties, but Overgeared has Reidan, Bairan, Cork, Patrian, and Borneo. The combined size is enormous. Maybe Grid will soon be eligible to be king.』

Satisfy's opening phase. Players, like NPCs, could become nobles and even royalty. In order to build up wealth, power, honor, and to reach a high status, the players worked tirelessly. As a result, many rankers had succeeded in becoming nobles. However, no one had yet become qualified to be a king. This was the first time that the media used 'First King' for a particular player.

Of course, the shockwave was large. Many refuted it.

『Do you think a kingdom can be built just based on territory? The most important thing is the workforce, the workforce.』

『The Overgeared members are only in the hundreds. They're lacking the talent to build and manage a country.』

『No. Personnel can be filled up with NPCs.』

『Are competent NPCs that common? I assure you, the construction of a country for a player is only possible after at least three years. In addition, the player is likely to be someone other than Grid.』

『Who is that?』

『God of War Ares. He's an unofficial ranker and his activities are limited to wars, so few people know about him... His ability in war and politics will surely overwhelm Grid's.』



"You've grown since I last saw you."

Originally, Grid always looked for Irene first when he returned to Reidan. But right now, Lord was a priority. His love for Irene strengthened his love for Lord.

"The more I look, the prettier he is."

All parents said their children were cute, but Lord was really beautiful. He had Irene's white skin, oval-shaped face, and big blue eyes. He resembled Grid in his high nose and sharp eyes.

These features harmoniously intertwined to create a perfect young man.

"Huhuhut... It's like my childhood..." Grid looked at the past and stroked the hair of the sleeping Lord. "Please always continue to grow up healthy."

'Don't taste misfortune and always be happy. Don't get upset when meeting someone strong. Become the pride of my love, Irene.'

Grid made a gentle expression and confirmed Lord's status window out of habit.

Name: Lord Steim

Age: 3 years old Gender: Male

Occupation: Young Nobleman

Title: Grid's Son

* The son of a legendary blacksmith. He has inherited most of his father's abilities.

Title: Genius of the West Continent

* A genius that represents one continent. He overwhelms national geniuses, and his level and abilities will rise 60% faster than normal. In addition, he can acquire skills in a wide range of fields.

However, there is a limit to the level and abilities that can be raised until he is 15 years old.

Title: One who Will Become a Legend

A person who will leave his name in history. There is an 80% chance of being immune to all status effects and illnesses. When attacked, if his health falls to 1 point, he will enter the immortal state for 2.5 seconds.

Level: 15

Strength: 87 Stamina: 70

Agility: 109 Intelligence: 87

Dexterity: 150 Charm: 100

Dignity: 17 Insight: 80

Skills: Beginner Bow Mastery (F), Beginner Blacksmith Skill (F), Beginner Weapons Mastery (C), Daluka's Methods (A+) Discerning Eyes (S), Overwhelming Charm (S), Lantier's Methods (SS), Famous and Legendary Pedigree (SS).

His mother is the successor of a noble family in the Eternal Kingdom and his father is

a legend.

He has inherited all of his parent's strengths, so his potential is outstanding. Teaching him will be inspiring.

Recently, the discipline has been effective and he has learned humility. His heart is being tempered by the love from females.

"Eh...?"

Lantier's Methods. Previously, Grid hadn't know what it was when he discovered it, but now he knew. Lantier. The name of the legendary assassin Grid met in the Behen Archipelago.

'How does Lord have Lantier's power...?'

No matter how much of a genius Lord was, there was no way he could learn the power of a legend on his own. Someone had to intervene with Lord's teachings. The problem was that person's identity. Who would give Lord such strength, and what were their intentions?

Grid lost his smile as his eyes shone fiercely. He maximized his senses and caught something.

Chapter 510

The current Grid was different from the Grid when Lord was born. He honed his control skills in the Behen Archipelago, gained combat experience from the National Competition, strengthened himself through items and raids, and raised his level in the vampire city.

Grid's steady progress maximized the power of his stats, titles, and items, increasing the effectiveness of his five senses. It was enough to feel the presence of the king of shadows, Kasim, on the ceiling!

"Magic Detection!"

Paaaat!

It was so weak that Grid couldn't be certain, making him use magic. The magic was deployed throughout all of Lord's bedroom. He clearly caught Kasim's presence on the ceiling.

"How dare you!?"

Hiding in his son's bedroom! The furious Grid pulled out Iyarugt and Sword Ghost, aiming them at the ceiling. However, he couldn't hit the target.

'Fled?'

Grid was startled. The reaction speed of the person on the ceiling was so fast that he got the creeps.

'Dangerous!'

His sense of alertness deepened. In the first place, the person had been hiding in Lord's room without being noticed by the Overgeared members. It was obvious that the person wasn't ordinary.

"Shit!"

Lord's safety was the number one priority! Grid hurriedly grabbed the sleeping Lord and aimed Pagma's Swordsmanship, Wave, towards the person on the ceiling. Kasim on the ceiling was embarrassed.

'Attacking without asking any questions!'

At the very least, he might have a chance to introduce himself if Grid had asked who he was. But Grid just struck. He was confident Kasim was an enemy. Kasim was forced to resist in order to avoid death.

'Shadow Move!'

Supak!

Kasim hid himself in the shadows to hide from the wave of energy hitting the whole ceiling. Then a black sword appeared in front of his eyes as he moved to a new shadow created by the collapsed ceiling debris. Grid used the Slaughterer's Eye Patch to chase after Kasim and fired Pagma's Swordsmanship, Kill.

Kasim was astonished.

'He has grown in the few months I haven't seen him!'

The stab filled with killing intent that headed towards him! Kasim was about to flee when he was caught by the God Hands.

'He blocked all the ways to escape?'

It was a skill that accumulated from countless fighting experiences. It was a level that was hard to deal with. Kasim determined that he might die and used his strength.

"Shadow Soldiers!"

Pepepepeok!

All the shadows that existed in the bedroom responded to Kasim's call. The shadows formed large and small bodies and created a barrier around Kasim. Kasim managed to defend against Grid's Kill and the God Hand's attacks and then moved. He aimed for the God Hands, not Grid.

The shadow soldiers all threw shadow spears simultaneously. There were exactly 67.

Teteteteng!

[God Hand (1) has stiffened.]

[God Hand (2) has stiffened.]

[God Hand (3) has stiffened.]

[God Hand (4) has stiffened.]

[God Hand (1) has stiffened.]

[God Hand (2) has stiffened.]

...

...

“Crazy!”

Grid was astonished. The unidentified intruder had a turban wrapped around his whole face and demonstrated an incredible ability to use shadows. All the shadows that existed around him were used for movements, defense and attack, while the defense and attack power were the best. The ability was unmatched compared to Tarma who he met in the National Competition.

Where had this monster suddenly appeared from? A name suddenly popped into Grid’s questioning brain.

‘King of Shadows!’

Kasim!

‘That damn bastard is aiming for me again!’

During the days when Grid was still active in Winston. The assassin called Shay had

hired Kasim to kill Grid. He was blocked by Huroi and Euphemina and eventually withdrew.

"Noe! Randy!"

Grid was certain that the opponent was Kasim and used all his power. Kasim was a named NPC. He had a third advancement when Grid met him a long time ago, so it was highly likely he was at the fourth advancement now. Grid judged it would be difficult to handle Kasim by himself and summoned his pets before using Linked Kill Wave.

Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The walls of Lord's room were smashed and all of Reidan Castle shook. It was the overwhelming strength of Linked Kill Wave, which could be called Grid's ultimate attack. However, it was unreasonable to hit Kasim with a non-targeted skill. Kasim avoided the eight strikes of Linked Kill Wave by moving through the shadows and ended up behind Grid.

"Duke Grid, please calm down first and let me spea..."

Kasim attempted a conversation.

"Where are you going?"

Randy copied Grid and threatened Kasim with Link.

"Kyong!"

Noe's mouth opened to swallow Kasim. This was followed by the God Hands wielded Mjolnir. Kasim eventually had to use a hidden technique. It was the manifestation of 'Greed,' a technique that drew all the shadows to one point and swallowed everything around it. It was Kasim's unique skill that he created by combining Daluka's Methods and Lantier's Methods.

Kuoooooh!

"Kyaaack!"

"Nyang! Scary!"

Randy, Noe, the God Hands and the furniture in the room. Everything except for Grid was swallowed by the shadow. It was like a black hole, although it naturally wasn't comparable to the power of the universe. Kasim's Greed could only swallow the target for 3 seconds before spitting it out. Of course, these 3 seconds exerted absolute force during a battle.

"Duke Grid! I'm not an enemy!"

"Not an enemy?"

Kasim finally got a chance to speak to Grid. Kasim hurriedly shouted, "I want to become your ally!"

"Ally? You?"

Grid asked like he didn't understand.

"Uhhh..."

Lord who had fallen into a deep sleep after working too hard the past few days. Despite the turmoil of the battle, the child only woke up now. Then he laughed when he saw that Kasim was in front of him.

"Teacher!"

"Teacher?"

Grid was stunned.

"Ah! Father!"

Lord belatedly realized that he was in Grid's arms and hugged him tightly. Finally, Greed spat out Noe, who shook his tail nervously.

"I suffered needlessly. If only you talked and resolved it from the beginning, nyang..."

It was because he was born in the human world. Noe was gradually losing the instincts of a memphis, the best demonic best of hell that enjoyed combat and slaughter. A pacifist demonic beast.



"There was a story like this."

For a long time, Grid heard a lot of stories from Kasim. Kasim's past. The fall of the Nero. Being wanted by the empire. His relationship with Doran. His observation of Grid. The thoughts he had during the observation period. Protecting Irene and Lord and ultimately becoming Lord's teacher, etc. Kasim told Grid all of it.

What was Grid's response?

"Thank you."

Their first meeting was the worst, but that was the past. It was a fact that Kasim protected Irene and Lord, with Lord even testifying directly. Grid wasn't unscrupulous enough not to feel gratitude. He bowed his head deeply and thanked Kasim. Grid was also greedy. Kasim was the most powerful assassin in existence and the only person who knew Lantier's techniques. Grid coveted him. He wanted to make Kasim his own person. He also knew he could have Kasim.

Grid's raised his head and stared straight into Kasim's eyes.

"Kasim, I will fulfill your desire. Starting today, formally serve me."

He was in a position where he needed to be hostile to the Saharan Empire. One of Grid's ultimate goals was to win greater honor and riches, and to destroy the empire for Piaro and Asmophel. However, he knew that it was hard. Maybe it was impossible. But he would challenge it.

"Didn't you see the possibility when you looked at me? So believe in me and serve me."

Kasim had no reason to refuse. In the first place, it was also what he wanted.

"I am grateful." Kasim immediately kneeled and pledged. "I will be your shadow."

[King of Shadows Kasim has become your knight!]

[Kasim has become a member of Reidan!]

[Your charm has increased by 100!]

‘Good!’

This was what he wanted. The thrilled Grid immediately gave Kasim a role.

"I want you to protect my family like you are doing now. In addition, I'd like you to work hard on raising an assassin group. Is it possible?"

"As I said before, there are a number of assassins from the Silver Dragons. They are acquiring Daluka's Methods, so I think it should be sufficient to make an assassins group out of them."

Grid nodded.

"Okay. From now on, your position is leader of the Overgeared Shadows."

"...Yes."

He didn't know what Overgeared meant, but it didn't sound that great. Kasim was troubled, but couldn't go against his lord. He nodded without saying anything. Grid observed him with the Great Lord's Sword.

Name: Kasim

Age: 36 years old. Gender: Male

Occupation: Leader of Overgeared Shadows.

Title: Last of the Nero Clan.

* The Nero have dark skin, making it easier to assimilate into the darkness. As the only survivor of the Nero, Kasim gains a large bonus effect when using Stealth. However, some of the power of throwing weapons is reduced due to his too long arms.

Title: King of Shadows

* Maximizes the effects and power of shadow techniques.

Title: Disciple of Lantier

* Knows the theories of Lantier's techniques. However, he doesn't have the talent to learn it himself.

Level: 401

Strength: 2,107 Stamina: 1,158

Agility: 4,409 Intelligence: 933

Persistence: 3,550

Skills: Trap Installation (A), Daluka's Methods (A+), Evolved Body Techniques (A), Evolving Techniques (A), Evolved Sword Techniques (A), Evolved Throwing Technique (S), Evolved Assassination (S), Nero's Stealth Techniques (S), Ultimate Shadow Technique (S+), Lantier's Methods Knowledge (SS).

It was unfortunate that only one special stat, Persistence, was opened. However, the numerical value of Persistence was unreasonably high. It was much higher than Grid's persistence. Kasim would never give up. In addition, his high strength and agility demonstrated that his combat ability was equivalent to Asmophel.

'He is equivalent to Piaro in places with a lot of shadows.'

Grid felt like he had won thousands of troops.

Chapter 511

The fuss ended.

Grid watched the restoration work of Lord's bedroom and asked Kasim for something. It was an extremely personal favor. Kasim hesitated before nodding.

"Understood."

"Thank you for agreeing."

Grid was satisfied with the answer and summoned Lauel. It was to an office Grid hadn't used for a long time. No, it was an office that he almost never stepped foot in.

"Why don't you take over this room? It's several times larger than your office."

Lauel handled all tasks related to the guild and territory management. Grid suggested it because he wanted to create a better work environment for Lauel.

"I have been given a lot of power as your proxy, but in the end, I am not you. I don't dare sit forever in a place where you will have to sit."

'It's serious.'

Lauel seemed to have become affected by historical dramas. Grid smiled at Lauel, who was immersed in the role of a loyalist. Then he was informed by Lauel about the current situation of Overgeared. Grid's expression distorted.

"I can't understand what Peak Sword is thinking."

As a result of this war, losing Cork Island was inevitable. It was too far away, and both Lauel and Grid were aware that they couldn't defend it. Nevertheless, they pressed on with the war because the benefits were bigger. In fact, Overgeared's growth had increased by lengths and bounds due to absorbing two territories, Earl Ashur, and the 7,000 Patrian soldiers.

But for Peak Sword, Cork Island was a special territory. He absolutely didn't want to

lose it. Grid belatedly understood his heart.

"I will go to Cork Island."

He was already familiar with defending territories as a former soldier of the Korean army. Grid was confident that he could defend Cork Island for months or years.

"It's my land. I must keep it."

Grid felt emotional about leaving the responsibility to just Peak Sword. Lael couldn't accept it. "It isn't possible. If your growth stagnates, the Overgeared Guild will suffer a huge loss."

"But I can't let Peak Sword do it alone."

Among his valued colleagues, Peak Sword was special. A fair person who shouted 'Do you know God Grid?' anywhere and to anyone. He also cheered, trusted, and supported Grid, handing over his guild and territory to Grid. Grid couldn't repay his true heart, but he couldn't ignore Peak Sword when he was in trouble.

"I will go and help Peak Sword. Don't worry about my growth. If I stay on Cork Island and make items for the soldiers, my stats and skill levels will continue to rise. I can be strong no matter where I am."

Of course, the rate of growth was much slower than hunting and raising his level. The moment that Grid was being stubborn.

-God Grid, don't come. It's funny that I am saying this, but Cork Island is just the tip of Overgeared. It's impossible to keep it forever. It's just a waste of time for you to come here.

A whisper came from Peak Sword. It was Lael's doing. Grid continued to insist on going, so Lael sent a whisper to Peak Sword.

-God Grid is the master. I'm just a guild member and the responsibilities I bear can't be compared to yours. Don't lose focus by caring about one guild member. Give priority to what you need to do. Become strong enough to take back Cork Island again at any time.

"..."

Grid didn't insist any longer. He decided to accept Peak Sword's heart because he knew his priorities.

"Then I will go to the East Continent."

Grid was currently level 317. The vampire cities were no longer giving him a lot of experience. The vampire cities not conquered yet were under a direct descendant. Since the direct descendants were at least an earl, the danger was ridiculously high. But he didn't yet have the ability to clear the Behen Archipelago. Grid wasn't strong enough to defeat the legends that had been turned into death knights by Pagma.

It was a stagnant situation. Grid judged it was the proper time to go to the East Continent.

"Take care."

Grid asked the smiling Lael one more time.

"It is really okay without me?"

"Yes, of course. Originally, it was a little dangerous. But things have changed after you brought in Kasim."

In fact, he couldn't assert that it was completely safe. But Lael didn't want to hold on to Grid's ankles. He exaggerated somewhat to make Grid's footsteps lighter.

"Then I'm glad. Okay, I have to say goodbye to Irene and..."

Grid was relieved by the answer and left Lael behind in the office. Grid ran straight to Irene's bedroom. It was the last time he would share love with his wife before he left. Lael looked at his back and became very excited.

'My Lord, I will give you a surprise soon.'

If Marquis Steim agreed to support Grid, the Overgeared members would be able to expand the scale of their forces at once and Grid would be qualified to be a king. Grid would have the incredible experience of being a king when hunting on the East Continent. Lael wanted to see Grid's shock and delight as soon as possible.



Before going to see Sticks and heading to the East Continent.

"Irene, this is a gift."

"Oh my... Dear husband, it's refreshing."

After meeting with Irene, they entered the bedroom and Grid gave her pajamas. It was a white one-piece pajama. A legendary rated item.

[Direct Vampire's Pajamas]

It had the effect of revealing the skin when a person wore it. At first, he thought it was a useless effect.

"There's a reason why it's legendary rated!"

Irene looked more alluring than ever when she wore it. The Direct Vampire's Pajamas was a stunning item worthy of the legendary rating.

"Irene!"

"Dear husband."

Grid enjoyed Irene's body, which had become more mature since Lord's birth, and he used his legendary hand techniques. Irene's moans that occurred every time Grid's large and thick fingers moved over her skin became a thrilling melody.



"It's still dangerous."

Grid got minerals from the guild warehouse and went to visit Sticks. He heard a negative opinion from Sticks.

"It is estimated that most of the top skills currently on the West Continent came from the East Continent. Looking at this, it is obvious that the overall level of the East Continent is above the West Continent."

Grid knew. In fact, Sticks explained that the Supreme Swordsmanship that Piaro used during his period as a great swordsman originated from the East Continent.

"The reason why the people of the East Continent created stronger skills is due to the harsh environment."

It was Sticks' reasoning that the monsters inhabiting the East Continent were much stronger than those on the West Continent. Grid wasn't nervous about this. Rather, he was quite excited.

"I will become stronger quicker if I fight the strong. Sticks, I want to quickly become stronger. So send me to the East Continent."

The biggest reason he wanted to become stronger was because his valued family, friends, and colleagues were depending on him. The second reason was he wanted to surpass Kraugel. It was Grid's dream to break all the records set by Kraugel and to rise to the top. It was a natural desire to have as a game player.

"No. It's wiser to go after you have grown more from the vampire cities. Aren't the vampire cities good hunting grounds?"

One of the few candidates who could cleanse and repair the Contaminated Behen Archipelago. It was Grid. Grid also saved his life and was the father of Lord, his precious disciple. Sticks wanted Grid to behave more reliably. He hoped that Grid wouldn't take unacceptable risks.

"Those blessed or cursed by the gods... Grid, I know that you have more than one life. But that doesn't mean you can overcome death completely."

That's right. It couldn't be compared to NPCs who only had one life, but players suffered an enormous loss from death. Their experience dropped, there was a chance of losing items, and the potential to fail certain quests. But how could a user play the game if they were afraid of this?

'I would play CD games if I was afraid of failure. There are many save points.'

Grid asked Sticks.

"Sticks, will you only use addition if it's hard to learn multiplication?"

"..."

"No? It's time for me to challenge new times."

"...I am convinced."

It was a low-level example, but he could see Grid's nature from this remark. Maybe Sticks' egotism had grown as he became older. He realized that his thinking was too narrow and handed a piece of paper to Grid. It was originally an item that Grid had to purchase directly using points earned in the Behen Archipelago.

[East Continent Movement Portal Scroll]

You can go to the starting village of 'Pangea' on the East Continent.

Weight: 0.1

"Okay."

It was always good to get a freebie! Grid smiled widely as he said goodbye.

"I'm going."

Flash!

Grid used the scroll immediately and was engulfed in light. Sticks was startled by the sight and muttered.

"No... You should also take the return scroll for the West Continent..."



[You have crossed the Dead Sea and arrived on the East Continent.]

[You are the 31st player.]

[The distance from the West Continent is too far. All forms of contact with players from the West Continent will be blocked.]

[The energy flowing is very dark. Mana regeneration rate will increase by 10%.]

[The gravity here is too strong. Strength and agility will decrease by 10%. Health regeneration will slow down.]

[This is forced due to natural influences. It can't be resisted.]

"Isn't this too beneficial for magician type classes?"

Grid didn't have any large complaints since he had many high mana consumption skills.

"Rather, the 31st player..."

Some new people must've stepped on the East Continent.

"Eh?"

The East Continent's starter village, Pangea. Grid looked around and was startled.

Chapter 512

‘Why is it so big?’

Grid was surprised due to Pangea’s scale.

‘I thought it would be a small village because it’s a starter village.’

It was the reverse. Pangea was large enough to be called a city. He couldn’t see an end to the wall, no matter how he turned his gaze. It seemed much bigger than Reidan, the second largest city in Eternal, with the population even being higher. Reidan was lacking in people, while everywhere in Pangea was crowded with people.

‘The lord here must have it good...’

He would be earning a lot from all the taxes the citizens were paying. Desert cities, fortified cities, etc. Grid only owned cities that didn’t possess a lot of money, making him feel envious.

“Ah?”

Grid was constantly observing the area when he noticed something.

‘There’s a lot of ethnic variety?’

Grid thought of the East Continent as Oriental. He imagined an Oriental style of living where the people had black hair and black eyes. However, while there were many inhabitants of Pangea who seemed Oriental, others were reminiscent of Westerners and Middle Easterners. The same was true for the architecture lining the streets. Some buildings looked like they came from the Joseon Dynasty of Korea, others looked like cathedrals from Medieval Europe, while mansions in the Middle East were also present.

“Wow. This is very...”

He thought he should eat jjamppong for lunch today. He was somewhat disappointed since he was hoping for the mysterious old Oriental mood.

‘But this might be an advantage. If a player of another nationality comes, they won’t stand out.’

Pangea was just the starter village. This must be an arrangement for players visiting from the West Continent for the first time.

‘A city or kingdom with the Oriental atmosphere I imagined probably exists somewhere.’

Grid’s reasoning was appropriate. The East Continent was known to be far larger than the West Continent. Grid lingered for a few hours in Pangea. He observed the shops and streets full of people in order to understand their rules, sentiments, and culture. It was an effort to adapt.

He didn’t move without thinking like the old days. It wasn’t irritating if he thought about it as meaningful behavior.

‘There isn’t anything special. It’s the same for the people. I should head to a smithy now.’

Grid determined that he had looked at Pangea enough and was filled with a new curiosity. He was curious as to how the blacksmiths of the continent worked and what type of battle gear they produced. He wanted to study it. Grid didn’t forget his duty as a legendary blacksmith.

"Esteemed elder, excuse me. Can I ask a question?"

Grid called out to a fat old man passing by.

“Where is the smithy?”

The elder NPC called Pao Woo looked over at Grid and asked.

“Is this your first time in Pangea?”

"Yes, I came from far away."

He didn’t say he was from the West Continent. Their perception towards the West Continent was still unknown, so he had to be as careful as possible. It was very smart of Grid.

"Ahh, I see. There should be one or two smithies over there..."

Pao Woo explained it based on the central square.

"There is the White Hammer smithy on the east road, the Black Anvil smithy on the west road, the Red Tongs smithy on the south road, and the Blue Flames smithy on the north road. They are the most famous smithies in Pangea. If you visit one of them, you will surely be able to buy something that suits you."

"Are there many blacksmiths working there?"

"A moderate amount. At least 100."

The goods produced in a smithy weren't just battle gear. There were also a variety of items needed for everyday life, such as kitchen knives, hammers, farming equipment, etc. Therefore, the production demands for blacksmiths in cities with a large population were much higher. The West Continent set a limit on the number of smithies in each territory in order to keep the local lord in check.

"Thank you."

He politely said goodbye to the kind old man and moved to the White Hammer smithy. He chose it because it was the closest one, a mere five minutes away.



[You have entered the White Hammer smithy.]

[The blacksmiths of the East Continent have a different viewpoint from those of the West Continent. The effect of Pagma's Descendant won't work.]

"Hrmm."

Originally, Grid was favored by intermediate level blacksmiths and worshipped by advanced level blacksmiths whenever he visited a smithy. Excellent blacksmiths knew that Grid was a better blacksmith than them just by looking at his body and hands. But not the blacksmiths of the East Continent.

Grid was disappointed. Was it because he wouldn't be treated well? No, it wasn't because of such petty reasons. It was because he thought the skills of the East Continent blacksmiths wouldn't meet his expectations.

'Their lack of a discerning eye means they lack ability.'

He might not be able to learn any blacksmithing from the East Continent.

'I should focus on levelling up and new titles acquisition as planned.'

Flinch.

Grid was about to leave the smithy when he suddenly stopped.

Ttaaang!

The sound of the hammer striking iron was so clear? Grid doubted his ears and changed the direction of his footsteps. Then he stared inside the smithy with a spellbound look. There...

Ttang! Ttang! Ttang!

Hwaruruk!

Puok. Puok.

Chiiiik!

10 blacksmiths were working around a large furnace in the center. Someone was sitting in front of the anvil hammering, another person was cooling hot iron, while someone else was constantly working the bellows. Grid was impressed as he instantly grasped their skills.

'They are blacksmiths who have reached the advanced level of the Blacksmithing skill.'

The reason why the blacksmiths of the East Continent didn't recognize Grid's greatness. It wasn't because they were 'incompetent,' but because they were different. The techniques of the Eastern blacksmiths were different than those of the blacksmiths on the West Continent.

‘No, it’s ahead.’

In particular, the forging techniques were excellent. They stacked layers of metal together and repeated the process. It was a method that required tremendous physical strength, patience, and delicacy. But the common blacksmiths of the West Continent avoided this task. They chose the easy method most of the time.

‘This is clearly a superior professional mindset. Is it a phenomenon caused by the high competition rate of having so many blacksmiths?’

Grid felt a strong sense of curiosity as he looked at their equipment.

‘When forging iron, they use an iron hammer. When forging mithril, they use a mithril hammer...’

It was to increase the efficiency of forging while paying attention not to conflict with the nature of the metal. It was an idea that Legendary Blacksmith Grid had never thought of.

‘What is that liquid that’s released into the water used for quenching?’

There was quite a lot he could learn from here. It happened when Grid was closely observing the work of the blacksmiths.

"Do you want to learn blacksmithing from us?"

Someone came up to Grid. He had dark skin and thick lips like someone from Africa. The muscles around his neck were so developed that they were as thick as Grid’s thigh muscles. His name was White. (TL: The spelling of this is more romanized to sound like white in English. Meanwhile, the name of the White sister is the actual Korean for White, which is spoken in a different way.)

He misunderstood Grid as trying to become a blacksmith and said with a gentle expression.

"Well, it’s wonderful that you want to learn, as long as you are prepared to work. But I have many people like you come here every day. I can’t accept just anyone. If you want to learn our techniques, you must first prove that you are qualified."

"No, I just want to briefly tour..."

Grid couldn't finish his words. White randomly handed him an axe and a notification window popped up.

Ttiring~

[A quest has been created.]

[Chop Firewood!]

Difficulty: ???

White, the owner of the White Hammer smithy wants to test you.

Bring back two 100 year old White Trees at the forest in the north of Pangea.

Quest Clear Conditions: Cut down two 100 year old White Trees.

Quest Clear Rewards: 12% experience. Get a job as an apprentice at the White Hammer smithy.

Quest Failure Condition: None.

'No, is this a joke? It's outrageous.'

Grid's eyes narrowed. A level 317 user was expected to chop firewood? The reward was also to get a job as an apprentice blacksmith. He never imagined that in this world, there would be someone crazy enough to try and make a legendary blacksmith as an apprentice.

'Certainly, there are things I can learn. But it isn't big enough to spend a lot of time here.'

The level of his techniques were far ahead of them. He could learn a variety of ideas here, not technical matters. It wasn't worth investing time in this quest.

'In the first place, isn't this a quest for beginners on the East Continent?'

Grid was about to refuse when he was surprised by something. When he cleared the quest, he would get 12% of his experience?

‘Crazy.’

Based on a level 317 users, it was a amount that he would acquire from defeating 500 lower vampires. He could get a huge amount of experience just for cutting down two trees. He honestly couldn’t believe it, but the system didn’t lie! Grid’s eyes shone like lanterns as he confirmed again.

"Really? I just need to cut down two trees?"

“Yes.” White nodded.

Grid smiled widely.

“Then I will go!”

This was paradise!

‘The East Continent is the best!’

Grid recalled his beginner days as he ran towards the forest carrying the axe. He faded into the distance as he looked at the quest information on the map. White looked after him before someone asked him.

"Do you really think he can cut down a 100 year old White Tree?"

A 100 year old White Tree was as hard as iron and as fierce as an active volcano. A famous woodcutter couldn’t even cause a nick in it and a mighty shaman couldn’t suppress the fire. It wasn’t called the Daoism Tree for nothing. A perfect flame could be produced if it was used as firewood, but that was impossible. It was common sense for anyone who dreamt of becoming a blacksmith. But the black-eyed young man didn’t have that common sense. It was certain that he didn’t study anything about blacksmithing.

“There are a lot of rabble coming in recent years.” White shook his head and returned to his spot. He shouted at his men. “Hey you! Focus more! We have to win this year’s competition!”

Chapter 513

“It’s hard.”

The gravity of the East Continent was much stronger than the West Continent. As a result, Grid’s stamina, strength, and agility received a penalty. The aftermath of this was quite large. From the center of Pangea to the White Tree Forest. He was already exhausted after only one hour of running. He would’ve been fine for another 20 minutes on the West Continent.

‘It would’ve been relatively comfortable if I flew.’

But he didn’t use that method. Something annoying might notice him if he flew.

‘Huhuhut! Now I have become pretty smart!’

Grid was pleased with his development and caught sight of the white forest below the hill. A white forest that existed in the city. The scale wasn’t huge. There were roughly 1,000 trees densely packed together. It was beautiful. Like snow had fallen, the leaves were white and the forest looked like giant cotton from the distance.

‘It goes well with the old Korean-style houses outside the forest.’

It reminded him of a snowy winter landscape seen in historical dramas. At least this place gave him the Oriental feeling he was hoping for.

‘If I sit here eating kimchi...’

It was best with soju. He wanted to take a break to log out and have some kimchi with soju. But playing Satisfy after drinking was a shortcut to defeat. It wasn’t uncommon for people to try enhancing their equipment under the influence of alcohol. Grid had to refrain from drinking if he was aiming for the top.

"I need to use the break time to eat and exercise, raising my physical strength to play the game..."

Grid controlled his heart and descended the hill into the forest.

‘I have to cut down a 100 year old tree?’

In today's society, there were many ways to measure the age of a tree. They could know the age of the tree without having to cut it down and check the growth rings. It was the same with Satisfy. It was simple using the appraisal system. In particular, Grid had the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill.

The Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill was unrivalled among the various types of appraisal items and skills in Satisfy. While top rated appraisal items revealed around 6~10 pieces of information, the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill revealed 10~12.

“Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal.”

It was the nearest tree. Grid laid a hand on the tree that was around 5m high and used the skill.

Ttiring~

[White Phosphorus Tree]

Status: Very healthy

Age: 607 years

It is assumed that the origin of this tree is Shangri-La.

It is often called the Daoism Tree and is the national wood of Hwan Kingdom.

The trunk and branches extend straight towards the sky.

The hardness of this tree, which symbolizes high dignity and elegance, is comparable to dragon iron.

"There's a place on the East Continent called the Hwan Kingdom... What's dragon iron?"

The existence of Shangri-La and daoism weren't surprising. In the past, Grid became aware there was a class called daoist. But he never heard of dragon iron.

"It seems like the name of a mineral."

It was a name that he never heard of on the West Continent. Grid found it interesting.

'Indeed, there are separate materials that only exist on the East Continent.'

The natural environments of the East Continent and West Continent were different. It was expected that there would be things on the East Continent that weren't present on the West Continent, and vice versa.

'It's possible to produce different items.'

Grid was full of expectations as he imagined that his base as a blacksmith would expand in the future.

Lululala~

He started humming as he appraised the other white phosphorous trees around him. Then he learned a surprising fact.

"Aren't the trees a lot older?"

100 years old? How funny. Most of the white phosphorous trees were older than 500 years. There were some that were over 1,000 years old.

'Cutting down trees that are hundreds of years old...'

It was quite troubling about the trees, but that was all. It was a very easy quest. Then he could gain 12% experience.

"I have decided on these ones."

Grid picked a 103 year old and 106 year old white phosphorous tree. He pulled out the axe he received for the quest.

[White's Axe]

Rating: Normal

Durability: 150/150 Attack Power: 53

An axe made by the owner of the White Hammer smithy, White. It boasts great durability, allowing more trees to be cut down.

It is highly popular among the nearby woodcutters.

Conditions of Use: None.

Weight: 109

There were no options, but the durability was acceptable for an axe. The attack power was also considerable for something with no usage conditions. If White was active on the West Continent, his axe would be sold as a 'weapon' to novice players.

"Similar to Khan..."

White's age seemed to be in the mid-30s. The fact that he was already comparable to Khan was great, considering he was a NPC.

'He isn't even a named NPC.'

It was obvious that the blacksmiths of the East Continent were ahead of those in the West Continent. They seemed to have a lot of special know-how.

'The difference is due to the environment.'

While the West Continent limited the number of blacksmiths in each territory, there was no such restriction on the East Continent. The number of blacksmiths on the East Continent was far greater than the West Continent. This large number meant a bigger competition. The blacksmiths of the East Continent developed steadily while competing with each other. It was understandable that they would be more skilled than the blacksmiths of the West Continent.

"As a result, the soldiers of the East Continent are stronger than the West Continent."

The East Continent soldiers would have better equipment than the Western soldiers, which would lead to a difference in attack power.

"Well, I guess it won't be better than my soldiers."

The Reidan soldiers under the aegis of the legendary blacksmith were the real overgeared soldiers! Grid was filled with pride as he opened Latina's Power, which was attached to the Rune of Darkness.

"Can you Become the King of the Dead?"

...He called out the skill name in question. Two skeletons popped up to Grid's left and right. They were skeletons holding half moon axes. Overgeared Skeletons One and Two. Grid handed White's Axe to Overgeared Skeleton One. Then he sat down to one side.

"I will recover my stamina while you cut down the tree. You should be able to do this much, no matter how stupid you are."

Clack clack! Clack!

In response, Overgeared Skeleton One struck the white phosphorous tree in front of him as hard as possible with the axe.

Peok!

The moment that Overgeared Skeleton One struck the white phosphorus tree with the axe!

"...!"

The eye sockets of the Overgeared Skeleton One became larger. The bones of the skeleton started to twist.

'What is this?'

Grid blinked at the behavior.

[Overgeared Skeleton One has suffered catastrophic damage!]

[Overgeared Skeleton One has returned to the soil.]

Overgeared Skeleton One crumbled. The white phosphorus tree was fine, without a single scratch. Grid frowned.

“These guys are really...”

They were too useless. It was a skeleton that couldn’t even cope with the impact of hitting the tree. He didn’t know why. Grid clicked his tongue and spoke to Overgeared Skeleton Two.

“Skeleton Two, I hope you are different from Skeleton One.”

It was at this moment that he decided. He would only invest points in intelligence for the fragile Overgeared Skeleton One, raising it as a skeleton mage. Meanwhile, he would raise Overgeared Skeleton Two as a skeleton warrior. But what was the reality?

Overgeared Skeleton Two was the same as One. Their level and stats were the same.

Kaaang!

Clack! Claack! Clack clack!

Overgeared Skeleton Two struck the white phosphorus tree and was damaged like Overgeared Skeleton One. It soon crumbled.

“This is crazy.”

Grid was stunned when he saw Overgeared Skeleton Two return to the soil. He cursed as he picked up White’s Axe left on the ground.

“You useless little bastards!”

They couldn’t even cut down a tree! Grid controlled his heart and struck the white

phosphorus tree with an axe. Then he had a shocking experience.

Chaaeng!

[The durability of White's Axe has decreased by 37.]

[There is a strong pain from your wrist. You are temporarily paralyzed.]

[You have resisted.]

[Health has decreased by 1,700.]

[You were unable to damage the white phosphorus tree.]

"Ugh!"

It was hard. It was at least the steel grade. Grid was shocked and took one step back.

'I expected it to be hard since it was compared to dragon iron, but it's this hard?'

Now he understood. This was why a woodcutting quest gave 12% experience.

'This quest isn't easy.'

Grid guessed that the odds of a typical blacksmith not clearing this was 100%. But Grid was a legendary blacksmith. He put away White's Axe and armed himself with the +9 Failure.

"I didn't know I would need to cut a tree with a sword."

Kkuok.

Grid grasped Failure with both hands.

Step.

Among the pure white leaves falling like snowflakes from the white tree, he started a dazzling sword dance. It was Pagma's Swordsmanship, Link. The legendary rated skill was aimed at the white phosphorus door in front of Grid.

"Link!"

Pit!

Pipipipit!

Dozens of energy blades struck the white phosphorus tree.

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 4.]

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 5.]

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased.....]

[There is a strong pain from your wrist. You are temporarily paralyzed.]

[There is a strong pain from your neck...]

[You have resisted.]

[Resisted...]

[Health has decreased by 1,801.]

[Health has decreased by 1,730...]

[You were unable to damage the white phosphorus tree.]

"Heok?"

The +9 Failure also didn't do any damage?

‘Shit, how hard is this?’

“Yes! Let’s see who will win!”

He felt sorry for calling the skeletons incompetent. In the beginning, the tree wasn’t an opponent they could go against. Grid apologized to the skeletons and unfolded a new sword dance. He used Pinnacle Kill, which was regarded as one of the strongest skills existing right now.

Seokeok!

The white phosphorus tree was damaged.

“...What?!”

Grid was astonished.

Puaaaaaaaaaah!

An explosion of light from the cracked white phosphorus tree hit Grid.

[You have done great damage to the white phosphorus tree!]

[The white phosphorus tree has exploded from the shock!]

[You have suffered fatal damage!]

[A legend doesn’t die easily. You can resist all attacks for 5 seconds with a minimum of health.]

Kurururung...

The white forest revolted. The ragged Grid was filled with confusion.

“...Oh my god.”

His immortality passive was activated while cutting down a tree? He never imagined it. It was a different experience. Grid was at a loss for words for a moment before bursting into laughter. It was a laugh of disbelief. At his feet, there were the fragments of the white phosphorus tree. They were the fragments that fell off from Pinnacle Kill just before the explosion.

Chapter 514

‘This isn’t the time to lose your mind.’ Then Braham’s voice entered Grid’s ears. ‘Isn’t the duration of the immortal passive only 5 seconds?’

Gold? No, this time was more valuable than a diamond. Grid needed to actively utilize this limited time.

“Thank you.”

Grid recovered thanks to Braham and immediately took action. He needed to confirm it.

‘First of all.’

Jjejeong! Jjang!

The first thing Grid did was to stab and slash at the damaged white phosphorus tree. It was to check if this damn tree was still hard or would explode after the fragment fell off. It was still hard and there was no explosion.

‘Is it correct to say it’s dead? It won’t explode if I throw them in the fire.’

The white phosphorus tree was just hard. If he assumed that it would burn, there wouldn’t be a problem if it was used as firewood.

‘I don’t understand the reasoning behind using this tree as firewood.’

Was there a special effect?

‘Of course there will be.’

What were the effects?

‘Sooner or later, I will find out. I will experiment.’

Step.

Grid kept constantly moving. He fired Kill at the white phosphorus tree.

Chaaeng!

[The durability of the +9 Failure has decreased by 6.]

[There is a strong pain from your wrist. You are temporarily paralyzed.]

[You have resisted.]

[The immortal state is activated. Health isn't lost.]

[You were unable to damage the white phosphorus tree.]

"Che, Kill doesn't have an effect."

The defensive power of the white phosphorus tree was extraordinary. The fact that he couldn't inflict damage it with Kill meant it was impossible without a skill that ignored defense.

"Then what about this?"

Seokeok!

Grid used Pinnacle this time. Failure moved across the trunk of the white phosphorus tree.

[You have damaged the white phosphorus tree.]

[The bark of the white phosphorus tree has spat out flames!]

Compared to Pinnacle Kill, the attack power of Pinnacle was weak. It didn't 100%

ignore defense. Pinnacle didn't cause damage to the white phosphorus tree and it didn't explode after being hit by Pinnacle. Only one fragment dropped.

'This is better... '

Kurururu!

Flames shot towards Grid from the white phosphorus tree. The heat of the flames distorted the area. The flames that hit Grid were sharp and fierce, like fangs. But Grid was invincible in the immortal state. He didn't receive any damage from the flames. Amidst the glowing flames, he spoke in a somewhat calm tone.

"I can only use Pinnacle."

Pinnacle Kill was too powerful. The explosion of the white phosphorus tree dealt damage in a 4m radius. Even Grid found it difficult to cope. On the other hand, the range of the flames that emerged after Pinnacle was limited. He would be able to avoid it using the Slaughterer's Eye Patch and Quick Movements.

Braham asked, 'Why don't you give Magic Missile a try?'

The duration of the immortality ended. After the flames died, Grid retreated from the white phosphorus tree that fell quiet again.

"Doesn't Magic Missile just penetrate through? Isn't it inappropriate for logging?"

'Aim at the branches. Pinnacle can only cut off one branch at a time, so isn't it faster to use Magic Missile?'

"But the Magic Missile that I shoot is weak."

It was doubtful if Magic Missile could scratch the white phosphorus tree, no matter the ignore defense effect attached to it.

'Why don't you try it instead of whining?'

"Um..."

Grid received Braham's opinion and fired Magic Missile at the thinnest branch on the white phosphorus tree.

Peng!

"..."

Indeed. Grid's Magic Missile didn't even scratch the white phosphorus tree. Grid smacked his lips.

"There really is only Pinnacle."

The cooldown time of Pinnacle was 2 minutes. It meant he could cut off one branch every 2 minutes.

'It will take all day to gather enough firewood.'

It was too much time to waste just to obtain 12% experience. It wasn't as efficient as hunting in the vampire cities. Grid frowned and was troubled for a moment.

'Should I use Assimilation?'

Braham's master level Magic Missile could collect the firewood relatively quickly.

'...But.'

He didn't want to. It was too much to borrow the strength of a legendary great magician for logging.

'Borrowing your strength just for this... '

Grid didn't want to use Assimilation for a reason. He didn't know what dangers existed in the East Continent, making it too risky to act without his strongest card on hand.

'Grid, can't I help you? It has been a long time since I got some outside air... '

Braham started to say something but Grid didn't listen.

"Now!"

Grid confirmed that the cooldown time of Pinnacle had returned and used it again.

Seokeok!

Hwaruruk!

Flames were fired the moment a branch was cut off. Grid borrowed the power of the Slaughterer's Eye Patch and read the path. The problem was that the speed of the flames was too fast.

'Shit.'

Grid knew that he couldn't completely avoid it and escaped using Quick Movements.

"Phew..."

Grid picked up the branch of the white phosphorus tree. He gritted his teeth. A legendary blacksmith and duke of a kingdom was struggling to cut firewood. It was enough to make his tears flow down.

"Damn, this quest is completely twisted. That damn White person... Eh? Wait."

Grid suddenly had an idea.

"The White Hammer smithies used an iron hammer for iron and a mithril hammer for mithril?"

Something came to mind.

'Diamond.'

A diamond was needed to process a diamond. There were many things in the world that could destroy a diamond, but only a diamond could cut another diamond.

'Maybe the white phosphorus tree...'

It had a property that made it hard to destroy. What if the white phosphorus tree was similar to a diamond? Grid reached this idea and didn't hesitate. He gathered the scattered pieces of the white phosphorus tree and started to observe them with the perspective of a blacksmith.

'Forging and tempering them is possible. But refining? Isn't a process necessary?'

Grid thought about it. He dreamed of a bigger growth and focused without becoming

nervous. Then after a while.

“...Okay, I will try it once.”

Grid smiled and entered the ‘axe’ category of his list of production methods. The pattern he pulled out was the Woodcutting Axe.

[Woodcutting Axe]

Rating: Normal ~ Legendary

An axe optimized for cutting trees.

It is an axe that any woodcutter dreams of having.

Conditions of Use: Woodcutter Level 100 or more. Beginner Woodcutting Technique level 7.

It was a matter of pride now. As a legendary blacksmith, he couldn’t be beaten by firewood. Grid burned with motivation as he took out a portable furnace. Then Braham advised,

‘No matter what you do, try summoning the Overgeared Skeletons as often as you can.’

“Why those guys?”

‘By observing you, they may learn new skills or magic.’

Grid was startled.

"Eh? The skeletons have learning abilities?"

Then wasn’t a necromancer a true scam? Braham explained to Grid.

‘No, common skeletons aren’t capable of learning. But the Overgeared Skeletons have intelligence. They are recognized as a unique entity and can be summoned again after

being destroyed. They are like death knights and lich.'

"Their intelligence is in the single digits..."

'Well, you should try it. Maybe they can learn low level magic or skills.'

"Hrmm... Yes, it isn't very difficult to follow your words. The Overgeared Skeletons might be trash, but I can use them depending on the situation if they acquire skills."

Grid had overlooked one thing. Braham considered most of the abilities in the world as inferior.



"Shit! This won't work! I need a stronger fire!"

The White Hammer Smithy. White and his nine blacksmiths were irritated. Pangea's lord held a blacksmithing competition every year. It was the goal of the White Hammer Smithy to win the competition and supply the battle gear of the army for one year, but reality wasn't so kind. The battle gear created by the White Hammer Smithy was somewhat lacking compared to the level of the other large smithies.

"Looking at the status of the final product, the championship has disappeared this year..."

"We haven't won the competition for five years since Master died..."

The mentor of the White Hammer blacksmiths was White's father, Dawwhite. The White Hammer smithy had gone downhill since he died five years ago. There were people who said that the White Hammer smithy had lost their qualifications to be one of the four great smithies.

This was despite White's efforts.

White trembled.

'It's all my fault. I didn't listen to Father's words and neglected the bellows.'

White believed that forging was what created the quality. As the successor of the White Hammer smithy, he focused on the hammer and tended to neglect the bellows. In his

youth, he didn't realize that the difference of only 1 degree in the temperature of the flame could create a significant difference with the performance of the item.

"The flames... If I can make them hotter..."

White and the blacksmiths bowed their heads. Then an unfamiliar voice was heard.

"I have come to deliver firewood."

"Firewood?"

All the blacksmiths apart from White felt confused.

"Didn't we already acquire the firewood at dawn today? Then what is this delivery?"

In the first place, the black-haired young man who said he came to delivery firewood was unfamiliar. He wasn't one of the usual woodcutters they traded with. As the blacksmiths were looking at the young man...

"Firewood... You brought it?"

White was more flustered than when his wife was having an affair.

Chapter 515

[Daoist Woodcutting Axe]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 1,000/1,000 Attack Power: 310

* Emits strong flames every time durability is lost.

* Easily cuts the white phosphorus tree.

* Influences the flames of the white phosphorus tree.

An axe resembling those used by the daoists in Shangri-La.

It originally is something that can't exist in the human world, but Legendary Blacksmith Grid broke the rules by producing it. There was no malice, nor was it a fluke. This is the result of Grid devising the ideal form and is purely from his abilities.

The Daoist Axe produced by Grid has a much better effect than usual daoist axes.

Conditions of Use: Daoist

Weight: 410

[An legendary rated item was produced, so all stats have permanently risen by +10 and reputation throughout the continent has risen by +500.]

[There is a beneficial effect from producing the highest quality. The good luck stat has increased by 5.]

It must be a special legendary item that he made for the system to attach a 'beneficial effect' to it. Grid felt lacking in his intelligence and good luck stat, so this made him happy enough to fly. He felt like rain had come after a drought.

“16 good luck! Nice!”

Good luck was more difficult to raise than any other special stat. It was impossible to distribute stat points to it, and the act of bringing out a ‘beneficial effect’ was unconditionally random, so training it was difficult and even the title effects weren’t applied to it. Now his good luck stat increased by 15 points at once, making it 16.

“Amazing... This is really amazing.”

What if his good luck stat kept rising like this?

“There will be a day when there is a 100% chance of making a legendary item!”

It was like saying he would always win the first prize when purchasing a lotto ticket. Grid was counting the chickens before they hatched. He was in a good mood and put on his best smile as he touched the axe.

“This is really, very well made.”

An axe made of white wood from the handle to the end of the blade. He had hesitated for a moment about making the handle with the white phosphorus wood, but it was a good choice.

‘I learned a lot as soon as I came to the East Continent.’

He learned how to make use of the properties of minerals from the White Hammer smithy and was able to grasp the existence and characteristics of the white phosphorus tree through the quest given by White. In retrospect, White was a good person, not a bad one.

‘He was giving me a trial. Perhaps he instinctively knew my skills from the beginning.’

He was ashamed of himself for blaming White the whole day.

‘Indeed, there are no blacksmiths who are bad people. Isn’t he as nice as Khan?’

Whatever happened, the result was good. During this process, Grid’s dislike for White had turned into liking. It was the aftermath of obtaining a good result.

Lululala~

Grid hummed happily as he finished chopping the firewood and returned to the White Hammer smithy. Then he shouted to White and the other blacksmiths.

“I have come to deliver firewood.”

Why was Grid so excited?

[A special thing has happened after making the 20th legendary item!]

This short phrase had come to mind the moment he produced the white phosphorus axe. It was the biggest factor behind Grid's good mood.



‘Who?’

The black-haired man who delivered firewood. White also initially failed to recognize who he was. He was the owner of one of the four great smithies in Pangea and couldn't remember all the rabble.

‘When did I see him?’

The wild eyes that were intense like a hawk. White remembered seeing them somewhere before.

‘Ah!’

White gazed at the black-haired Grid silently before becoming surprised. Early this morning. Someone who dreamt about becoming a blacksmith but didn't have any knowledge, he had left to cut down the white phosphorus tree. This young man was that very person.

‘What?’

Surely he didn't really cut the white phosphorus tree? The confused White burst out laughing.

‘That is impossible.’

The white phosphorus tree was as hard as dragon iron. Cutting it? It was impossible unless the best people in the Hwan Kingdom came. There weren’t one thousand year old white phosphorus trees for nothing.

"You are the friend from this morning. You’re aware that I don’t want ordinary firewood, right?"

"Of course. I am well aware. This is very remarkable firewood."

Grid was beaming. White thought it was ridiculous.

"Yes, it isn’t a firewood that anyone can obtain."

Saying that he came to deliver firewood?

‘Did this person paint oak wood white?’

White wouldn’t be deceived by such a cheap trick. Grid grinned at White and raised a thumb.

"Amazing. Did you see my skills with one glance and gave me a hard task? You knew it from the beginning. I’m able to chop down the white phosphorus tree."

"...?"

White couldn’t understand this nonsense. They were talking face-to-face, but a conversation couldn’t be established. White was in the shade so only his dark skin was visible. Grid pulled out the white phosphorus wood.

"I studied many things thanks to you. Here. It’s what you requested."

‘This isn’t an ordinary trickster.’

This was one of the typical characteristics of a scammer. It was to use ambiguous or distracting words to make a person less vigilant.

'Hmmm, it won’t work on me.'

White never trusted anyone since being betrayed by his wife. He was convinced that Grid was a scammer and started to look at the firewood with distrustful eyes.

‘Trying to trick me by painting oak wood white... Heok? Heooooook!!’

White’s face became darker. He looked at the firewood with a disbelieving expression and started looking through them. Then he became more and more shocked.

‘T-This is really white phosphorus wood?’

He was certain. There was no doubt. Thus, White was confused.

‘H-He really cut down the white phosphorus tree?’

The white phosphorus tree wasn’t hard to cut down just because of its hardness. It was the nature of the white phosphorus tree to emit flames as soon as it was hurt. Even if a person managed to cut down the white phosphorus tree, death was waiting for them.

It was impossible to obtain firewood from a living white phosphorus tree. But this black-haired youth in front of White. To be honest, White didn’t catch his name, yet this unknown young man had cut down the white phosphorus tree.

‘...It can’t be!’

The astonished White came to a conclusion. Maybe this man in front of him...

‘A legendary woodcutter!’

Handling gold and silver axes!

‘Once a person reaches the peak in one field, they will become a daoist! Is this a daoist who is about to leave for Shangri-La?’

Yes, it was White’s own mistake when he thought this young man was interested in becoming an apprentice blacksmith. In fact, he wasn’t a blacksmith, but a great woodcutter.

‘Ahh...! Who knew that my smithy would have such a person helping them?’

Perhaps his father had made a deal with this person to help the White Hammer smithy. He must've thought about the old ties with the White Hammer smithy and ran over.

"Thank you! I really appreciate it!"

White was caught in a big misunderstanding and bowed to Grid. Bowing all of a sudden? Grid's expression stiffened.

"...Thanking me like this, does that mean you didn't expect it? Don't tell me that you're trying to decrease the value?"

Grid's eyes changed the moment he spoke these words. He also lowered his voice. It was to express a threat about what would happen if White took away some rewards.

'Ohh! This pressure!' White felt a big thrill as he looked at Grid. 'This is really a daoist. In fact, he doesn't need a reward. But I will feel burdened if he helps me without receiving anything in return.'

The heart was like a sea. White felt really thrilled.

"No way. Of course I will give the appropriate rewards."

Ttiring~

Then a notification window flashed in front of Grid.

[The quest difficulty of 'Chop Firewood!' has been revealed.]

[The quest difficulty of 'Chop Firewood!' is SS+.]

[The clearance compensation for Chop Firewood! has changed.]

[The character experience and experience of all skills will increase by 40%.]

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Breath is now Lv. 7.]

[Blacksmith's Rage is now Lv. 7.]

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Link, is now Lv. 8.]

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Kill, is now Lv. 7.]

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Wave, is now Lv. 6.]

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Pinnacle, is now Lv. 6.]

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Restraint, is now Lv. 4.]

[The level of Pagma's Swordsmanship, Transcend, is now Lv. 4.]

[The affinity with White, the master of the White Hammer smithy, has reached the peak!]

[In the future, you can buy all items in the White Hammer smithy at a 20% cheaper price. The goods you sell will be bought for a 20% higher price.]

"...Wow."

The quest was really difficult. He was convinced when he saw it was an SS+ quest.

'No, what constitutes an SSS quest?'

Grid thought he was probably the only player able to clear the white phosphorus tree logging quest. It was a quest that only one out of two billion users could clear. Considering the difficulty, he felt like 40% character experience and skills experience was actually less than he deserved. At the very least, he should've gained one level for each. Grid felt regret.

Then White looked at him and asked carefully.

"Perhaps... What is your name?"

"..." This man didn't even know his name? "Grid."

Grid replied with an absurd expression and White grabbed both his hands.

“Do you know the famous battlegear production competition of Pangea?

‘Battlegear production competition?’

Grid didn’t know. He couldn’t answer as White shouted towards him.

“Grid! Please come to watch the competition! In order to repay your hard work, the White Hammer smithy will definitely win this year!”

“Oh...”

Grid’s mouth curved upwards. He couldn’t resist an opportunity to see the skills of the blacksmiths of the East Continent.

“When is the competition?”

"In three days."

‘Okay’

He could spend three days adjusting to the hunting grounds near Pangea and return with loot to sell. Grid made a decision and nodded.

“I understand. I will expect to see something good in three days.”

Chapter 516

“Then I’m going.”

The first thing Grid did after leaving the smithy was to set an alarm. It was an alarm so that he would return in time for the battlegear production competition held in three days.

“I’m anticipating it...”

Grid definitely had to watch the competition.

White said that the skills of the blacksmiths participation in the competition were great.

‘The Black Anvil smithy specializes in tanning, the Red Tongs smithy in quenching, and the Blue Flames smithy in the furnace processes?’

It was just like the blacksmiths of the White Hammer smithy being exceptional in forging.

‘This will be a good study.’

Grid had inherited Pagma’s techniques, but his overall experience and knowledge tended to be lacking. The blacksmiths of the East Continent had built up their know-how for many years. Just like with the White Hammer smithy, Grid was expected to be able to learn new things from the competition.

‘I can’t be conceited despite being a legendary blacksmith!’

The proud Grid wanted to learn from less talented blacksmiths in order to reach a higher ground. He puffed up his chest and walked in a dignified manner through the streets.

“Hmm?”

Grid received information that a monster community existed to the north of Pangea

and headed to the north gate. He suddenly stopped walking. It was because he heard a familiar name in his ears.

“Try it once! Just one bite of our orc cream pie will have your juices flowing! The combination of the fragrant orc fat and the refreshing cream is perfect! It’s a dish that Pangea’s little hero, Kraugel, admired for being delicious!”

‘Kraugel? Pangea’s little hero?’

The chef was talking about the same Kraugel that Grid knew?

‘Of course.’

Kraugel was the 1st ranked user and created a sensation wherever he went. Not only was he strong and fast at levelling up, he was also famous for his understanding of the quests.

“Kraugel’s name resonates through all the villages and cities that he visits...”

It wasn’t something just spoken between players. Grid smiled bitterly and approached the middle-aged chef.

“One orc cream pie please.”

He was curious to taste the dish that Kraugel praised. In addition, he wanted to know what types of activities Kraugel did here.

‘Why is he called the little hero?’

Grid wasn’t suspicious because he didn’t believe that the word ‘orc’ in front of the name meant the monster orc. He paid 1 silver to pay for drinks service and looked at the pie with anticipation. At first glance, the pie was an orange cream pie. The outside pastry looked crisp and the inside looked moist.

“Ohu.”

Grid thought that 1 silver wasn’t a high price as he took a bite of the pie. His face distorted.

‘Not even a dog would eat this.’

It was cream without the freshness of fruit and was sour like vinegar. It wasn't smooth and stuck to the tongue. The mean inside was too tough and chewy. The pie looked crisp on the outside and moist on the inside? More like it was burnt on the outside and poison on the inside.

'How can this be called food?'

Rather than the ingredients used for this dish, the oxygen consumed by the chef was a waste. The chef approached the angry Grid and asked.

"How is it? Delicious?"

"..."

He was asking sincerely? Grid closed his mouth and the chef, Idan, spoke unabashedly. "Did you know that Kraugel ate four of these pies? They are really delicious!"

"Is this true?"

"Yes, hundreds of people saw it."

"Crazy..."

Grid felt sympathy towards Kraugel. What type of tasteless food did he grow up with that he would praise this garbage pie? Grid hurriedly asked Idan a question. He had lost 1 silver, so he intended to get as much as possible from stepping foot in this restaurant.

"Who is Kraugel? What did he do that made him be called a little hero?"

"Ah, you are an outsider. I noticed that you didn't know the taste of my pie."

'I know.'

Grid barely suppressed the words that tried to come out.

"Pangea was originally a rich and peaceful city for hundreds of years. But two years ago, that peace suddenly ended. Our great lord suffered an illness and his aide, Arube, was appointed as temporary lord."

“Then Arube was a bad person and Kraugel defeated him?”

“Hat... Hum hum, it’s similar but different. Excuse me, this person. Please listen to everything I have to say first. I want to talk.”

It felt like Idan had a lot of say.

“Anyway, the story is as you predicted until the middle. Arube, who was famous for his good behavior, became a tyrant after being appointed as the lord. He came out from time to time to harass women, took away land from farmers using all types of excuses, and raised the taxes.”

It was too obvious. Grid’s ears pricked with interest as Idan’s story entered a new phase.

“One day, monsters started to infest the areas near Pangea. Pangea, where monsters have never showed up for hundreds of years!”

“Is it the monster habitat in the north?”

“Right, right. They were really frightening. The monsters moved systematically like an army and dealt tremendous damage to Pangea. People grumbled and hated the monsters that seemed to fall from the sky. We couldn’t resist them and were trampled on helplessly.”

“Then Kraugel appeared?”

“Yes! Our little hero appeared! As if he fell from the sky, he appeared and took down one or two monsters.”

‘One or two? The sky above the sky?’

Grid thought that it would be something amazing, but it was surprisingly simple.

‘Usually stories are exaggerated when talking about heroism... Ah.’

Grid realized.

‘The monsters on the East Continent are extremely strong.’

The monsters that invaded Pangea. Even Kraugel could barely deal with one or two. That's what the chef said.

"Despite Kraugel's presence, Pangea couldn't escape from the crisis. The monsters were too strong. The cavalry and strategies that Pangea are proud of didn't work... Yes, it was like someone was directing them to attack Pangea."

"Was that person Arube?"

"Huh?" Idan couldn't help feeling admiration. "How are you able to infer the story so easily and accurately? Are you perhaps a detective? Can you find the puppy that disappeared from my house?"

"..."

It was a tiring style. Grid remained silent and Idan went back to the main point.

"Yes, the monsters were controlled by Arube. More than 2,000 monsters were controlled by one person. Isn't it truly amazing? Arube was just an ordinary civilian before this!"

"Wow, amazing."

The story was so obvious that it wasn't anything special. Grid felt irritated because he had to eat unpleasant food and thought this was a waste of time.

"In fact, there was a reversal here. Arube wasn't Arube. It was a wicked demon who killed Arube, disguised himself, and then tried to destroy Pangea."

'This is the true story.'

Anyway, things had become clear. The daoist priests of the East Continent were completely different from the magicians of the West Continent.

'A legendary great magician wouldn't be able to control 2,000 monsters like limbs, right?'

'Right. It is impossible even for a taming master. Not all of them are strong, but it's better to be on the lookout.'

‘Yes, let’s go.’

Grid rose from his seat after Braham’s answer when Idan blocked him.

“That’s why. Find traces of the great hero who helped kill the evil daoist priest that the little hero Kraugel couldn’t defeat alone.”

Was this a quest? Why else would it go back to the true story? Grid had just come to a conclusion when a quest window appeared in front of him.

[Find the Traces of the Great Hero!]

Difficulty: A

The evil daoist priest revealed his identity. The small hero Kraugel fought with him and tasted despair. Pangea seemed to be on the verge of destruction.

But then a mysterious hero appeared. Later, the people of Pangea praised him as the great hero. The hero instantly defeated the evil daoist priest and saved Pangea from the crisis, but he didn’t disclose his identity and left. This made the residents of Pangea feel sorry. They have a strong desire to find the great hero and give thanks.

In particular, chef Idan has a duty to find the great hero. It is to regain the frying pan that was passed down through the family’s chefs for generations.

Quest Clear Conditions: Find the frying pan somewhere in the monster community.

Quest Clear Reward: Free lifetime use of Idan’s restaurant. 30% character experience.

Quest Failure: Idan, who is famous for his mouth, will talk about your faults all over Pangea.

“The place where the great hero was last seen was the north! But it has long been famous for the wild beasts and since the monsters arrived, it’s hard for me to head there directly. Please find the great hero’s trail and get my frying pan back!”

“...Ah.”

It certainly wasn't a bad quest. Grid planned to hunt in the north anyway, so he was in a position to look for the frying pan. If he could find the frying pan, he would receive 30% experience for free. The only disagreeable thing was the free lifetime pass to Idan's restaurant.

‘...Well, I don't have to eat there, so there's no reason to refuse.’

Grid made a decision and nodded.

“I understand. It's very hard, dangerous, and troublesome, but I will do my best. But I have one question. What is the correlation between the great hero and the frying pan?”

Idan gritted his teeth.

"When he appeared, the evil daoist priest... I was cooking in the kitchen and ran out onto the street with my frying pan. Then I bumped into the damn hero. He took my frying pan and beat the evil daoist priest with it?"

“...He beat the daoist priest with a frying pan?”

“Yes! It was great when the hero hit him with my frying pan! Wonderful and invigorating! But what? He left without returning the item he borrowed! He left with my frying pan!”

"..."

“For a chef, a frying pan is like the soul! It's like that hero stole my soul! Then he threw it away somewhere without a thought!”

There were really too many words. Just listening to the high voice was tiring. Grid quickly left the restaurant. Then he immediately left by the north gate.

Chapter 517

“Magic Detection.”

Magic Detection (Enhanced) Lv. 2 had a casting time of 5 seconds and a cooldown time of 8 minutes. It was significantly shortened compared to the Lv. 1 Magic Detection.

“Magic Detection.”

After leaving the north gate.

Grid used Magic Detection every time the cooldown was over on the way to the monster community. Thanks to the reduced skill cooldown time option attached to Braham’s Boots, Grid was able to use Magic Detection every 5 minutes and 30 seconds.

Why did he keep using Magic Detection? It was to increase the level of Magic Detection while preparing for any unknown danger.

“Magic Detection.”

The East Continent was a suitable environment for raising the level of Magic Detection. Originally, Magic Detection consumed 2,000 mana with every use, making it difficult to use often. However, the environment of the East Continent increased mana regeneration. The Ring of Absurdity reduced the mana consumption by half, and then the East Continent increased the amount of mana regeneration. He predicted that it would be possible to use Magic Detection repeatedly during hunting.

"This ring is really too good."

The Ring of Absurdity obtained from Black. It was much more valuable than a bunch of equipment item. By default, an accessory with a special option attached had low basic abilities. The Ring of Absurdity was an accessory at the peak of all accessories.

‘It would be nice if I could also make accessories...’

Of course, Grid could create simple ‘wearable’ accessories. But what was the reason for the existence of accessories? It was to satisfy the sense of aesthetics and to give

special options that couldn't be implemented on equipment items. The accessories that Grid made weren't worthy because their completeness was poor, they had no options, and they weren't pretty. It was a waste of time, materials, and manpower to make them. Just like Idan's cooking.

"Ugh... I still feel sick. It's amazing that the poor chef's restaurant is still surviving."

He was sincerely curious about why it wasn't ruined.

'It must not be bankrupt for a reason. Is there a special secret apart from the taste of the dishes?'

The road in the north hadn't been maintained, since it was occupied with monsters. Grid's expression was serious as he moved along the dangerous road filled with weeds and cracks. It was an unknown land where he didn't have the basic information. Grid realized once again that it was an area where he wouldn't receive any help.

'I am ahead of them.'

Grid always felt like he was lagging behind because he compared himself to Kraugel. It felt like he was following the path that Kraugel pioneered. But looking at it objectively, Grid was a leader comparable to Kraugel.

'Soon, I will be able to go ahead of Kraugel.'

The present Grid was much stronger and more versatile than the Kraugel who visited the East Continent. Grid was confident that he could get ahead of Kraugel, giving him a high pride.

'The rankers that I spend a year looking at from a distance...'

Now he was heading for the top. Those who he felt envy and longing towards were now mostly under him.

'This game is truly rewarding!'

Every human had the natural desire to accomplish something, and the culture that now dominated the world was Satisfy. Being the best here meant being the best in the world. Grid trembled with excitement. Come on! Grid felt like shouting in a loud voice.

The East Continent. Grid felt a sense of liberation as he saw the place where there were only NPCs and no players. It felt like falling onto a rich desert island! The game was much more enjoyable when Grid didn't have to worry about his dignity as leader of Overgeared. He ran towards the pine forest in the distance with a loud laugh. *Hahaha!* His laugh was like the crazy person who was present in every city.

'But it's amazing.'

Grid was abruptly running around like a dog in heat. Braham was amazed as he watched the pathetic Grid. Despite Grid acting like a fool, he still maintained the appropriate tension.

'Being cautious even when his heart is excited?'

In other words, there was no gap.

'There are many things that are lacking because he is still growing, but he already has the minimum requirements to be a legend.'

Looking at the current Grid, someone might see a gap and try an attack.

'They would die.'

The moment Braham thought this.

Step.

The moment Grid entered the pine forest full of pine needles.

Kyaaaaaoh!

A giant beast appeared and roared at Grid. Yes, it was a beast. Not a monster. It was a tiger that ran away from the monster community and hid in the forest.

"Die tiger, and leave behind your skin!"

Grid had picked up the tiger's presence with Magic Detection (Enhanced) and had been waiting for it. He cut down the tiger without any hesitation and obtained its leather.

“It’s very quiet. Why isn’t there a single monster despite the monster community being beyond this forest?”

‘It isn’t accessible. Don’t use your demonic power here.’

“Ah, is it because of this?”

Grid looked at the notification window that popped up the moment he entered the forest.

[This is a forest filled with a refreshing energy. Health and mana regeneration rate will increase by 20%.]

"If I ever experience a dangerous situation when hunting in the monster community, I can escape here."

'It is a big step that you are capable of thinking similar to dogs or cats. It will be fine if you continue to develop steadily in the future.'

Grid wasn't offended by the rough words that Braham spoke. He could feel the emotions from Braham's soul and they weren't negative emotions. Rather, they were full of liking. But Grid also had a nasty personality. He didn't let it pass nicely.

"Tsk tsk, look at the way you are speaking. There's a reason you were betrayed by your only friend."

‘...’

Braham was shocked. He was betrayed and killed by his only friend, and now his current friend was teasing him, it was really very sad. However, the legendary great magician wasn't easily shaken by words. He tried to remain calm.

‘H-He, friend... He... wasn't.’

"..."

Grid heard the quivering in Braham's voice and belatedly felt sorry. He coughed with shame and quickly left the forest. The pine forest was small so he could escape quickly. Beyond the forest, the large community of monsters entered his eyes. There were arched tents installed everywhere in the community. There was approximately 500 of them. Assuming that there were two monsters per tent, that was at least 1,000 monsters.

"There are tents and living tools. Doesn't it seem like the monsters living in this habitat are quite intelligent? Are they lizardmen type monsters?"

Grid consulted Braham's opinion, but Braham was silent. He was still in a numb, shocked state. As a legendary great magician, he was originally very strong in spirit and his basic tendencies were cruel. But ironically, he was weak towards those he liked.

Grid clicked his tongue at Braham. "How long will you stay like this? You're not a kid. Aren't you hundreds of years old?"

In fact, Grid didn't have any friends except the Overgeared members. His personality wasn't good enough to make friends and he didn't notice. In other words, Grid and Braham were in a similar category. He stopped trying to make fun of Braham and quickly understood the characteristics of the monster community.

'Is it a monster housing complex?'

The 500 tents in the community were separated by 50 meters each and each area was separated by each other by a low fence. Personal space seemed to be important to these monsters.

'Looking at the tools, they are humanoid monsters, not lizardmen. They like living together.'

A humanoid monster with high standards of living and strong independence. What was it? Grid remained confused no matter how much he thought about it, and then he realized.

'Yes, this is the East Continent.'

It was futile to analyze this based on common sense and information from the West Continent.

'I have to directly see and experience it myself.'

Sururuk.

Grid's figure disappeared. It was due to the Hooded Zip Up. He secretly moved towards the monster community and approached the nearest tent.

'There are no signs?'

Was this really a monster community? Did he come to the wrong place? The community was too quiet. Every tent showed no signs of life.

'Did they all leave?'

However, there would be traces if 1,000 monsters moved somewhere.

'Don't tell me...'

Was it nap time? It was nonsense that 1,000 monsters would be napping at the same time. Grid suppressed this ridiculous thought and looked inside the tent. Then he was startled. A rat. No, it was similar to a hamster. A big hamster couple was sleeping inside the tent.

'The monster is cute?'

No, the cuteness was secondary. It seemed like a monster with the basic 'hide' passive. It was difficult to read the information even when looking at it.

'Isn't this a scam?'

The moment Grid was confused.

"Muong?"

Kung kung. The hamster couple's noses twitched and they got up. Then they looked around and pinpointed Grid's exact location.

"Kyaak!"

The hamsters opened their mouths widely! The cute couple transformed into

monsters in an instant.

“Kuk!”

Grid was stunned as he saw the hundreds of sharp teeth in the hamsters’ large mouths. Hundreds of sawtooth-like teeth were deeply embedded in their mouths. It was so gruesome and unhygienic that it was creepy.

“Wow! Braham, do you see this? There is rotten food sandwiched between the teeth... Ugh!”

Grid frowned and blocked his nose.

Hamster. To be precise, the monster called the ‘big poisonous rat’ gave off a horrible stench when it opened its mouth. The stench was terrible enough to cause confusion and poisoning. He resisted thanks to the legendary status resistance passive, but the discomfort was significant.

“Human! Muong! Kill! Muong!”

The big poisonous rats became agitated by the intruder and started to wield their tridents. Their cute appearance was nowhere to be seen. The black eyes had turned red and the front protruding teeth dripped black poisonous liquid that threatened Grid.

‘Fast!’

The attack speed of the big poisonous rats was equivalent to the true blood vampires. Sometimes their tails would accurately strike at Grid’s weak points.

Peeng!

The moment he was caught by the hamsters, Grid had switched from the Hooded Zip Up to Lantier’s Cloak. The ground where he had just been standing was hit by the big poisonous rat’s trident and exploded. The big poisonous rats caused players to become confused and poisoned just by opening their mouths, then used their quick and strong attacks to kill the player. They were similar to the ‘senior monsters’ on the West Continent.

Then Grid? He felt excited instead of panicked. He already expected the monsters of

the East Continent to be strong. The stronger they were, the more experience they would give.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Kill!”

This was a somewhat large tent for a human. Grid used the footwork of his sword dance to evade and then linked the attack.

Chaaeng!

Kill accurately struck the hamster couple at the same time. A stunning notification window popped up in front of Grid as he killed them instantly.

[You have defeated a big poisonous rat.]

[35,970,411 experience has been acquired.]

“Kek.”

It was huge. It was far beyond his expectations.

Chapter 518

[You have defeated a big poisonous rat.]

[35,970,411 experience has been acquired.]

[A big poisonous rat's gallbladder has been acquired.]

[The big poisonous rat's leather has been acquired.]

[You have defeated a male big poisonous rat.]

[21,899,050 experience has been acquired.]

The hamsters were monsters present near the 'starter' village. They were likely to be located on the lowest level of the East Continent food chain. Nevertheless, they gave excellent experience. The female hamster gave seven times more experience than junior vampires, five times more experience than intermediate vampires and three times more experience than the senior vampires.

'Only the males clearly have a gender label and give less experience. Does this mean it is a matriarchal monster community?'

In fact, it was funny to say that the males gave less experience. The males alone gave two times more experience than the senior vampires.

'By the way, it's really great... '.

Grid roughly guessed that Kraugel came to the East Continent before his third advancement. He could hunt monsters like this, even if it was slowly? If the hamster didn't have the poisoning and confusion ability, Grid would simply admire it as being Kraugel. No matter how strong the hamsters, Kraugel would be able to overcome their physical abilities.

'But how did he cope with the abnormal states?'

The cooldown time of the detoxification potion was 10 seconds and there were no potions to recover from confusion. On the other hand, the hamsters constantly caused poisoning and confusion by opening their mouths throughout the battle.

‘It would be possible if Kraugel had accessories to resist poison and confusion...’

However, it was questionable if he would have status resistance accessories at the time.

‘No way, did he just block his nose?’

Satisfy’s system considered realism, so Grid directly blocked his nose. But it was impossible to block out the stench.

“Oof.”

Grid felt nauseous and left the tent. Braham watched the pathetic Grid and finally opened his mouth.

‘Did you forget what the chef of Pangea said? The monster community formed here after Pangea was invaded.’

The hamsters were likely to be one of the monsters defeated in the Pangea invasion and settled here afterwards.

‘They weren’t born near the village, so they might be a powerful monster species. Don’t assume that the big poisonous rats are the weakest monster on the East Continent.’

“Well... Indeed.”

The East Continent was very difficult. Since Satisfy’s opening, 31 people had visited the East Continent in three years. The East Continent was sure to have overwhelmingly higher content than the West Continent. But Satisfy was a game that considered balance. Since there was the possibility of exchanges between the two continents in the future, the gap between the continents couldn’t be too large.

‘That’s right. No matter how difficult the content of the East Continent, the hamsters can’t be the weakest monster here.’

Assuming that the hamsters were the weakest monsters, it meant that the soldiers of the East Continent had at least the strength of a hamster, which didn't make sense.

"Well, whatever. I just have to beat them. That's why I came here."

There was no need to complicate it unnecessarily. Grid checked the information of the loot he picked up.

[Big Poisonous Rat's Gallbladder]

A gallbladder filled with poison.

Upon taking it, you will become poisoned for 10 minutes and receive all types of conditions.

However, poisoning and confusion tolerance will permanently increase by 0.03% afterwards.

Weight: 1

[Big Poisonous Rat's Leather]

Smelly and tough leather.

It is difficult to use in real life because the odor doesn't disappear.

Weight: 30

"Wow."

Grid's eyes widened. This was the first time he saw an item that increased the resistance to an abnormal state.

'A lot of rich people will invest money to buy things like this gallbladder.'

Grid had the status conditions resistance passive, so items that increased resistance to abnormal statuses were useless to him. But there were those who weren't legends. For two billion users, status conditions were a challenge that must always be overcome. Everyone thought it was important to increase their resistance.

'This would be pretty expensive!'

The value would be at least one million won. But Grid didn't have any thoughts about registering the gallbladder in the auction house. It was because it would hurt him if others increased their resistance to status conditions.

'Don't put it on the auction house. Gather more and sell them to the guild members.'

Grid didn't intend to give it for free. He closed his inventory and approached another tent. He looked inside and saw a pair of sleeping hamsters.

"Another couple?"

Grid felt complex and subtle emotions.

'Do I have to hunt a couple every time?'

Wasn't he destroying a family? Grid hesitated before shaking his head. Setting aside NPCs, there would be no limit if he started feeling empathy for monsters. Grid controlled his mind and separated the +7 Sword Ghost into the long sword and short sword form. He used Pagma's Swordsmanship, Transcend, and swung his weapons continuously.

Peng!

Pepepepeong!

The energy blades fired from the long sword were powerful and destructive, while the short sword was small and relatively stealthy. Grid bombarded the hamsters in the tent without causing much disturbance, and the sleeping hamsters in the surrounding tents didn't wake up.

"Muong! It hurts!"

"Human! Kill! Muong!"

The hamsters were furious about being beaten in the middle of their sweet nap. It worsened as they watched their nest being torn apart. They grabbed their tridents and rushed towards Grid. But they couldn't reach him. The God Hands wielded Mjolnir and defended Grid.

Peok!

Peok peok peok!

"Muong! Muong! Muong!"

There was nothing strange with the Mjolnirs. The hamster couple fell into an infinite stiffness. As the golden hammers moved from left to right and alternated attacks, the hamsters lost a lot of health. Grid finished them off, receiving a lot of experience and another gallbladder.

"Isn't the drop rate surprisingly high?"

No, it was nonsense that an item that permanently increased resistance to abnormal statuses would have a high drop rate. Grid interpreted it differently.

"That's right, the drop rate isn't high. It is purely because of my good luck stat!"

He had 16 points in his good luck stat! Grid put a big significance on it. However, 16 points in a stat actually had no meaning. Looking at it, didn't Jude have 20 intelligence? It was just 16 points in good luck. But Grid felt infinitely positive. It was the good luck stat that he got after living unhappily most of his life.

"Hunting is relatively easy. Hit them with the God Hands while they're sleeping and then finish them off. Simple."

The large distance between the tents was helping Grid. It didn't seem dangerous unless he made a lot of noise. Grid smiled with satisfaction as he moved next door to slaughter the couple. The couple in the next tent and the couple in the tent after that...

'Dammit.'

Grid shook as he watched the dying hamsters hold each other. This hunting was too terrible. It wouldn't be strange if he obtained the title 'Couple Slaughterer.' Braham scoffed. 'Are you feeling compassion for creatures? That is a severe weakness.'

“No, doesn’t it look cute? Loving each other like that. It doesn’t matter if they’re monsters.”

He didn’t know why he had to hunt couples. Making a player slaughter couples in Satisfy, there was probably a psychopath on the development team.

“Okay. I have cleaned up the outskirts.”

There were 500 tents filled with hamsters. He took care of the tents on the outskirts in order, then headed a little deeper. Due to the nature of the circular formation, the closer he got to the center, the narrower the distance between tents became. If he made a mistake then he would have to fight at least four hamsters.

“Well, it isn’t bad.”

The experience of the hamsters was similar to the true blood vampires. But their overall strength was less than the true blood vampires. Of course, the true blood vampires were also different in level. Grid was looking at the average ones. The true blood vampires weren’t a problem for Grid, so hunting several vampires at once wasn’t an issue.

“I should reduce their numbers as much as possible before nap time ends. Now I will begin in earnest.”

Suuuk.

Four golden hands rose behind Grid. Grid grasped that the mana regeneration rate was 1.5 times faster than normal and commanded the God Hands.

"Shoot!"

Pepepepeok!

The Magic Missile bombardment fell on the hamsters.

Taack!

Grid rushed with the God Hands and raided the hamsters. The hamsters tried to defend or counterattack, but the combination of the God Hands and Mjolnirs was perfect.

“Revolve.”

Jjeejeeong!

While fighting in the vampire cities, Grid had become more efficient in using the God Hands in combat. Rather than defending against the enemy’s attacks with the God Hands, Grid handled them directly while the God Hands swung Mjolnir during that time. Once the target was stiffened?

“Linked Kill.”

Puok! Puk! Puk puk!

He would finish them off.

"Good."

Two pairs of couples... No, four hamsters died and Grid leisurely picked up the items they dropped.

“...Eh?”

On one side of the tent. He was something that was very familiar to modern people. It was a frying pan. Grid was surprised and checked its information.

“Unbelievable...”

Chapter 519

[Big Poisonous Rat's Frying Pan]

Durability: 5/9 Attack Power: 2

* When equipped, Beginner Cooking skill Lv.1 will be generated.

A favorite cooking tool for the big poisonous rats.

The big poisonous rats cook all types of food in this frying pan and use it as tableware at the same time.

It is a frying pan made with coarse technology, but it's better than nothing.

Conditions of Use: None.

Weight: 70

"...How did this happen?"

He thought it was Idan's frying pan. But it turned out to be the hamster's frying pan. Grid was baffled.

"No, this is ridiculous. Where in the world is there a hamster that cooks with a frying pan?"

Of course, he knew that the intelligence of the big poisonous rats was very high because he experienced it himself. Looking at the language skills and living standards, they seemed much better than orcs or goblins. But in order to create tools, the concept itself was actually needed.

In the end, the big poisonous rats were monsters. They were bound to be faithful to their survival instincts. This meant they understood that tools were needed to catch prey, producing weapons. But frankly, it was amazing that they even thought about

cooking.

“They normally eat raw meat. It’s funny that monsters have a desire for gourmet food.”

Would they also be interested in cleanliness? However, they had bad breath. They should’ve made a toothbrush as well as a frying pan. Grid threw the frying pan to one side and left the tent.

‘The hamsters came up with the idea of making a frying pan from somewhere.’

Maybe it was because Idan’s frying pan was abandoned here?

‘To clarify. They would’ve been influenced after finding Idan’s frying pan. Then things will fall into place.’

Tak.

The tent was in tatters from the aftermath of the battle. Grid lightly moved to the center of the big poisonous rats’ community. An exceptionally large tent appeared. It was 10 times bigger than a typical tent.

‘Over here.’

It was the location of the boss of the big poisonous rats.

‘There’s a high possibility that Idan’s frying pan is inside there.’

The problem was reaching there. Should he break through one point, or keep methodically getting rid of the tents on the edges?

‘It would be nice if I could go straight.’

The gap between tents was really large. He would need to smash the tents in front of it, but that wasn’t a problem. Just.

‘If I reach the boss with most of the tents untouched...’

The risk was too big. It would be annoying if the boss had a skill to call its surrounding allies. He might be swarmed by tens or hundreds in an instant, leading to death.

‘I will move forward from the outskirts. That will be easiest.’

In any case, there were no players on the East Continent. He didn’t need to worry about anyone stealing his prey.

“Right. There’s no need to fret.”

It felt like having a whole server to himself! Grid decided to eat comfortably and moved with slow but sure steps. He moved steadily from the outer tents towards the center of the community, killing the hamsters. The result.

[You have defeated a big poisonous rat.]

[36,445,900 experience has been acquired.]

[A big poisonous rat’s gallbladder has been acquired.]

[You have defeated a male big poi...]

[Your level has risen!]

[As someone with a second class, you will receive a level up bonus. 12 stat points have been acquired.]

[Six points have been forcibly invested into intelligence due to the influence of the second class, Legendary Great Magician.]

[Your intelligence is over 1,300.]

[A new magic spell can now be learned!]

It was already his second level up since arriving at the monster community. By destroying hundreds of peaceful homes, Grid reached level 319 and surpassed 1,300 intelligence. But Grid felt ashamed rather than happy.

“I... I am a homewrecker.”

The big poisonous rats were very loving. The couples were sleeping in the beds and before their death, they gazed at each other gently.

'Is this a new form of torture?'

A hunting system that made players feel guilty. It left a bad taste. Grid felt increasingly sure there was a psychopath in the Satisfy development team. Braham prompted the agonized Grid.

'Rejoice! You get to experience my strength which is different from the inferior people in the world!'

The greatest power in the world? It was his magic. Braham was confident about it. He wanted to remind Grid of his greatness. On the other hand, Grid became excited.

'New magic!'

It was the second time since he got this second class. Apart from Magic Missile that he acquired by default, he had only learned Magic Detection. The reason was his low intelligence. Despite having the class 'legendary great magician,' it was very sad because he could only use Magic Missile and Magic Detection.

But now wasn't the time to be sad. The opportunity to acquire legendary magic would come as he increased his intelligence! Grid was filled with tremendous excitement and anticipation.

"Now I can use Fireball!"

A notification window popped up in front of Grid.

Ttiring~

[A new magic spell can now be learned.]

[Alarm (Enhanced) Lv. 1]

A spell developed by the legendary great magician who has completely overturned the activation formula.

You can set all types of alarm sounds at the desired timing and location.

As the level rises, the diversity of the sounds and the range will increase.

Resource Consumption: 500 Mana.

Skill Cooldown Time: 1 minute.

-If you use this spell three times in Great Magician mode, you will learn it.

“...?”

Grid was stunned after verifying the notification window. He couldn't understand the situation properly as Braham's laughter rang in his ears.

‘Huhuhut. This alarm...’

"Noisy... No, be quiet."

‘...?’

“Please be quiet.”

Grid wanted to be alone. It was common knowledge that the lowest level magic included Alarm, but he never dreamt that Alarm would be acquired after Magic Missile and Magic Detection.

‘Isn't it a spell that should be learned by default like Magic Missile?’

What garbage spell needed 1,300 intelligence to learn? Grid was stunned as his expectations were shattered. He was so frustrated that killing intent slowly filled his eyes. The anger boiling in his heart needed an outlet.

“Kill...”

Kkuok.

He tightly gripped the Sword Ghost. Grid gritted his teeth and walked into the nearest

tent. It was the beginning of the fierce but stealthy slaughter. Grid didn't have any hesitation about killing the loving hamster couple. He couldn't afford to care about other people's circumstances right now.



"Hah... Hah... I can now live a little."

The large community of tents filled with big poisonous mice. All of their tents were burned, torn, or collapsed. It was the result of Grid's massacre that took half a day. There was only one thing still intact in front of him. The large tent in the center of the community. It was the place with the hamster boss and where Idan's frying pan should be located.

The level 320 Grid used Magic Detection. It was to gauge the existence of the boss and to roughly guess the level.

[Magic Detection (Enhanced) has been used.]

[Magic Detection (Enhanced) has risen from Lv.2 to Lv.3!]

[The power of Magic Detection (Enhanced) has increased! Magic Detection can now identify the target's stats!]

Name: Strong Male Rat

Level: ???

Class: ???

Stats: ???

Species: Big Poisonous Rat

Status: Monster

Name: Queen Rat

Level: ???

Class: ???

Stats: ???

Species: Big Poisonous Rat

Status: Monster

"Two here as well..."

The boss didn't even enjoy a harem and was a single-minded couple!

"Truly principled rats!"

Grid had felt expectant when the level of Magic Detection rose. Now he was once again angry. It was because the status windows showed question marks, making him feel betrayed by Magic Detection.

'My Magic Detection is a great magic. The only thing lacking is your intelligence.'

"Haha! That's right! Blame me! It's my fault that Alarm magic was created! Shit!"

Why would a legendary magician use Alarm? The moment he became upset at Braham. Grid unwittingly raised his voice and it was transmitted to the hamsters inside the tent.

"Muong? Why is a human here?"

"You will pay the price for impeding our happy nap time. Muong."

The queen hamster wearing a crude crown and cloak was huge. She was twice as big as Grid. The hamster queen showed off her white chest fur proudly and pulled out a paw from her red cloak. She pointed the paw at Grid.

“Muong. Humans are nasty because they have no fur. So disgusting. Muong, I’ll kill you right away.”

The queen hamster also used a trident as a weapon.

Swaeek!

The queen’s trident was fast and seemed like it would skewer Grid. Grid hurriedly avoided it while Braham spoke.

‘Leave it to me. I will show you how to use Alarm.’

"..."

How to use Alarm? Grid didn’t expect much. But he couldn’t ignore Braham’s words.

‘The Alarm spell can be used during a battle?’

Magic used by a legendary great magician. It wasn’t trivial if he thought about it calmly.

“Okay.”

Sururuk.

Grid’s hair turned white.

Chapter 520

[Assimilation has been used.]

[You have become one with Braham's soul. Control of your body has been given to Braham.]

[Your class will be changed from Pagma's Descendant to Legendary Great Magician.]

[Braham is searching for intelligence related items.]

[Malacus' Cloak has been equipped.]

[The Holy Light Crown has been equipped.]

[There are no wearable items.]

Sururuk.

The moment that Grid used Assimilation. The angular jaw full of muscular beauty became thinner and the muscled shoulders and forearms changed.

"Kukukuk!"

White hair flowed down underneath the crown. The white skin contrasted with the ruby eyes, creating a mysterious atmosphere. It was the emergence of the legendary great magician Braham, who was once a vampire.

"I never thought this body would be used to get rid of rats. It's refreshing."

Braham laughed with an arrogant attitude. Grid prompted him three seconds after Assimilation started.

'Come on, use magic! Don't waste Assimilation again and be vigilant!'

"You're a legend. Don't feel worried like the other lowly people."

Braham clicked his tongue and waved his hand. Then a master level Magic Missile (Enhanced) was created and circled around him. Grid was startled.

'How are you doing that?'

Magic Missile was the type of magic that launched after specifying the target. It immediately flew to the target as soon as it was used. There was no way to stop it in place. That was common sense.

Pajik!

Pachichik!

A ball of mana, which contained explosion power, was thrown up beside Braham. Braham gave an amazing answer to Grid.

"It's Alarm."

'What? Alarm?'

"Alarm is something that rings with no limit and isn't simply noise."

'...?'

"The Alarm spell is meant to ring in specified situations and times. Therefore, Alarm is inherently a timer magic. Then I strengthened that timer magic."

'I don't understand what you're saying. What does that have to do with stopping Magic Missile?'

"Before using the magic, I entered the command 'act when the alarm rings.' It is like the ticking time bomb that dwarves make."

'Ticking time bomb?'

Braham's clear example helped Grid understand. At that moment.

"Muong! Human! You dare invade the queen's castle! Myong!"

The intermediate boss of the monster community, the Strong Male Rat, shouted. He only targeted the white-haired Grid, Braham. Braham revolved mana around him and didn't care. It was either bravery or ignorance. The big poisonous rats were a clever species, but they were a physical species and couldn't use magic. The proof was that there were no magicians or shamans in the rat community.

"Muong!"

The wild-eyed Strong Male Rat reached Braham and stabbed with his trident. Braham precisely matched the timing.

Didididi!

There was a beeping sound from the Magic Missile hanging around Braham.

Peeeeeeong!

"...!"

The male rat was hit by the Magic Missile and fell back without even screaming.

"Watch."

A few steps away from the male rat, Braham cast a total of six Magic Missiles simultaneously. It was the multi-spellcasting that could be achieved as a result of combining the master level Magic Missile and the legendary great magician passive.

Pa-ang!

Paang! Pang! Papapapang!

'Wow...'

Grid admired it. The white mana balls looked like moonlight around Braham. They were like illusions, but also beautiful. Grid had no artistic sense and even he could tell. He switched to the observer's viewpoint and captured the current scene with a screenshot.

'I should set it as my phone wallpaper.'

He was the only one who had even seen the wallpaper for his phone.

“M-Muong...! Cowardly human!”

How could the Strong Male Hamster be humiliated by a human with the Queen Rat watching? The male rat was ashamed and angry, and once again rushed towards Braham. His speed wasn't lacking compared to Grid and the trident overwhelmed Grid's strength.

‘At least level 400?’

The intermediate boss was incredibly strong. It was unknown how strong the Queen Rat would be. A chill went down Grid's spine.

Didididi!

Didididididi!

The six Magic Missiles around Braham all sounded an alarm. And.

Peng!

Pepepepeng!

“...!”

One pierced the male rat's chest, two in the side, one in the elbow of both hands, and the last one in a vital spot. The Magic Missile accurately pierced between his eyes. The male rat once again couldn't scream as he shed blood, while Braham made a ridiculing sound.

“This is one of the ways to use the Alarm spell. Predict when and how the enemy will move, set the time, and assign it to an attack spell. Then your attack spell will smash the enemy at the correct timing. With a minimum of magic, you can exert the same power as the God Hands.”

‘...’

Grid understood what Braham was saying. But anticipating the opponent's action in real time during a battle, setting the time for the Alarm spell, as well as the attack

magic trajectory? Wasn't it impossible unless it was Braham? Braham assured the embarrassed Grid.

"There is an easier way of using it."

Tak!

Braham kicked the male rat that was trying to rise and withdrew back. Then he summoned another six Magic Missiles. Four Magic Missiles flew simultaneously towards the charging male rat.

"I won't take it anymore! Myong!"

The male rat swung its trident in a line.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

The powerful force struck the four Magic Missiles and destroyed them.

Ssik!

The male rat smiled with satisfaction. As soon as he swung the trident at the four Magic Missiles, the other two Magic Missiles and another six summoned by Braham had already hit him.

Pepepepeng!

"Muoong!"

The male rat flew after he was beaten by eight Magic Missiles. Braham shrugged.

"It's much easier to take advantage of attacks like this and the effect isn't bad. Alarm magic will be a big help."

The level of Grid's Magic Missile was still low. The cooldown was slower than the master level Magic Missile, so it was impossible to use two or more at the same time. But what if he used the Alarm spell? Grid could summon multiple Magic Missiles in sequence.

'Keep in mind that Alarm can only be attached to magic itself. The distance is also

limited. In particular, the Lv.1 Alarm is much more restricted. Well, you will soon know if you use it.”

‘Doesn’t the description say I can use it anywhere?’

“That is a description of the magic itself. Once learned, the level specific explanations will be more detailed.”

‘Um...’

Could he really use it? Braham gave encouragement to Grid who wasn’t confident.

“In fact, it’s easy to take advantage of Alarm.”

“Myooooong!”

The ragged male rat jumped up. Braham looked at the beaten up rat and raised a finger. Then he snapped it. And...

Wiiiiiiing!

“Kyaaaak!”

There was an annoying ringing sound from right next to the male rat’s ear. At that moment, the male rat’s eardrum burst and he sank down, his nose bleeding. It was the ‘forced balance loss’ state that couldn’t be resisted.

‘Making the alarm ring from his body...?’

Wasn’t this a complete scam? It was a perfect disruption. Even a legendary’s passive resistance couldn’t resist it. Braham spoke with consternation as Grid felt admiration.

“Well, to be honest, this can only be done at the master level for Alarm. Lv.1 Alarm should be like this.”

Clack!

Braham snapped his finger again.

Pipipipipi!

The alarm started to ring loudly beside the male rat's 'ear.' Braham fired Magic Missile at the completely wide-open male rat and grinned, revealing his white teeth.

"Does this look good enough for you?"

Braham was filled with pride about the enhanced magic he created. Grid didn't deny him.

'Amazing... The best.'

It was huge. A legendary rated magic. A notification window popped up in front of the shaking Grid.

[You have destroyed the Strong Male Rat!]

[205,700,890 experience has been acquired.]

[The Strong Male Rat's Gallbladder has been acquired.]

[The Strong Male Rat's Heart has been acquired.]

[5 blessed weapon enhancement stones have been acquired.]

[4 blessed armor enhancement stones have been acquired.]

[Congratulations! You have learned Alarm (Enhanced)!]

[The duration of Assimilation is over.]

[You have regained control of your flesh.]

[Braham's soul has temporarily dimmed.]

"...Eh?"

It was already three minutes? When he was in school, he used to fall asleep in less than

a minute and only focused on class for three minutes. Grid was very upset as his black hair returned. But it was only for a moment. He suddenly realized reality and was overwhelmed with despair.

The Queen Rat. The real boss of the big poisonous rat community didn't have a single scratch on her.

"Human. You killed my husband. Myang."

"...Ah."

Damn Braham. Couldn't he have killed the queen rat first? Grid confirmed that his mana was depleted and summoned the God Hands to keep the queen rat in check. Then he ran away. First of all, he needed to buy enough time to take two mana potions.

Chapter 521

[You have taken a high grade mana potion.]

“Shit.”

The alchemy facility in Reidan produced the superior mana potion. If he could take it, Grid would've filled up all his mana with only one potion. But the high grade potion only filled half his mana.

‘That Rabbit...’

Before going to the East Continent. When Grid had requested the potion, Rabbit couldn't raise his head.

‘The potions we have built up over the last few months has been depleted because they were supplied to the Overgeared members who participated in the war. I'm sorry.’

Damn alchemy! He had questioned the value of the facility ever since the ‘coolness’ option was attached to Iyarugt. Reidan's economy had recovered and was growing, but Rabbit still had an obsession with alchemy.

‘There is little effectiveness and it's just wasting money.’

However, the higher the level of alchemy, the more types of options that could be attached to the item. It was also possible to produce enhancement stones themselves in the future. Grid had poured a huge amount of gold into the alchemy facility. He couldn't stop supporting alchemy now. Therefore, he could only hope that it would become useful in the future.

“Myaang! My husband's enemy is laughing!”

The outraged Queen Rat kept chasing him. Grid ran with all his strength, but the Queen Rat gradually narrowed the distance. Grid stopped thinking and summoned the God Hands.

“Buy me some time.”

The level difference between the hamster couples was generally around 20 levels. The female rats were always at least 20 levels higher than the male rats. Based on the assumption that the Queen Rat was at least level 420, Grid didn't dare face the Queen Rat head on. He planned to use the newly acquired Alarm spell to create a favorable situation for himself.

Kung!

Kung kung!

The ground shook every time the Queen Rat took a step. He didn't know how she carried her weight despite her wrists and ankles being thinner than Grid's.

‘This monster!’

There was the possibility that Grid could be overwhelmed and commanded the God Hands to attack. First of all, he had the God Hand swing the Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir at the Queen Rat. It was the precursor of infinite stiffness. The Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir boasted a 100% accuracy rate and struck the Queen Rat's head hard.

Peeok!

[The Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir has caused the target to stiffen for 0.15 seconds.]

‘What...?’

Originally, the Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir caused 0.3 seconds of stiffness. Then what was this 0.15 seconds?

‘Is it a 50% resistance to status conditions? Or is it due to the level difference?’

A chill went down Grid's spine. The Queen Rat quickly recovered from the stiff and blocked the strikes of the other God Hands with her trident. Then her red eyes glowed as she hit the God Hands.

[God Hand (1) has received a strong shock and has become stiff.]

'Dammit!'

0.15 seconds was too short. It seemed impossible to cause infinite stiffness to the Queen Rat because she could recover before the other God Hands would link their attacks.

“Myaang!”

The Queen Rat caused all the God Hands to stiffen and threw her trident at Grid.

Kuwaaaaaang!

It was like a fighter jet was flying. The trident rushed through the atmosphere like a missile. Grid responded instantly.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

He had to run while waiting for the cooldown time of the potion to be over. How could he take advantage of Alarm to knock down that monster? He actively used his brain and coped with the thrown trident by using Revolve.

Peeeeeeong!

The rotated light and trident hit each other.

Puooook!

[You have dealt 190,300 damage to the target.]

The trident was turned around by Revolve and stabbed at the chest of the Queen

Rat. The Queen Rat suffered 200,000 damage in one blow, but didn't slow down at all.

"Muong!"

She pulled the trident out and chased after Grid again with the trident. Grid was able to figure out one feature of the Queen Rat.

'She will unconditionally use a throwing attack once we're a certain distance apart?'

If he knew it in advance, it wasn't difficult to cope with.

Kuwoooooh!

The trident made a loud sound like an animal's roar. Grid confirmed that the cooldown time of the mana potion returned, drank it, and used Blackening and Quick Movements.

Peeng!

Grid disappeared just before the trident reached him. The only thing left in his place were the remains of demonic power.

"Muong?"

The Queen Rat started to explore the area to find Grid. But he wasn't easy to find. It was because Grid wore the Hooded Zip Up the moment he had escaped. It was only a matter of seconds before the Queen Rat could find Grid, so Grid needed to catch her during this time.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship."

Grid appeared in the space where there was nothing. His position was above the Queen Rat's head.

"Muoong!"

The Queen Rat grasped Grid's position immediately using her excellent sense of hearing. She showed a ridiculous reaction rate. She avoided Grid's Pinnacle and prepared to counterattack. However, the Queen Rat hesitated before attacking. It was due to the God Hands. The God Hands had recovered from the stiffness and aimed at

the Queen Rat with Mjolnir.

'It's the end if I kill that human! Myong!'

Then Queen Rat made a decision quickly. She hesitated for only a moment. She ignored the attacks of the God Hands and waved her tail at the enemy human who killed her husband.

Peeok!

Like a bee's stinger, the sharp tail hit Grid's face. In return, the Queen Rat allowed a hit from the Mjolnirs and became stiff for a total of 0.3 seconds. At this time.

Sururuk.

Grid flew back after being hit by the tail and changed into Randy.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship."

The voice of the 'real' Grid was heard behind the stiffened Queen Rat.

"...Myong!"

It was a fake? The Queen Rat's eyes widened with surprise. She looked just like a hamster! Honestly, the expression was cute. But Grid wasn't deceived by the outward appearance and connected the skill to the end.

"Linked Kill!"

"Myaang!"

It was too late. 0.3 seconds of stiffness was too short. The Queen Rat was released from the stiffness and avoided the God Hands' next attacks. She intended to counter the human's attack. However...

"Muong?"

The Queen Rat was stunned. Didn't she clearly hear the voice of the human using a skill behind her? Why was there nothing when she turned back? The moment that the Queen Rat was feeling confused.

“Linked Kill Wave.”

Grid’s voice was heard from the sky. That’s right. The real Grid was in the sky. Grid’s voice that the Queen Rat heard behind her was merely a fake recorded with the Alarm spell. As soon as he learned new magic, Grid applied it properly in practice.

Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The bombardment of black energy blades!

"Kyaaaaang!"

The Queen Rat screamed from the pain. In the interim, the God Hands continued to attack the Queen Rat and Grid took another mana potion. He accumulated Magic Missiles.

‘Magic Missile. Magic Missile. Magic Missile.’

Magic Missile (Enhanced) Lv. 3 could be used once per second. He summoned it every time the cooldown returned and attached the Alarm spell to it. The result.

Kuoooooh.

Right now, Grid was as splendid as the sun as he floated in the sky. There were lumps of white mana around him.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

“Uhh!”

By now, the Queen Rat had learned the name of Grid’s skills. In the midst of the bombardment of energy blades and Mjolnir, she caught Grid speaking the name of a skill. She used the ‘Maintain Dignity’ skill that was the privilege of the queen who led the big poisonous rats.

Paaaang!

Maintain Dignity was a one-time override threat skill that a few leaders of a species had. The effect was absolute. The energy pouring from the Queen Rat caused the God Hands to stiffen and the Queen Rat rushed forward.

“Myaang!”

The angry Queen Rat’s voice was heard to Grid’s right. This time, it was an attack where she intended to kill her husband’s enemy. But once again, the Queen Rat went hungry. The real Grid was in the sky while Grid’s voice that she heard was a fake caused by the Alarm spell.

"This magic is a scam. Right?"

Ssik!

The Grid in the sky laughed and ridiculed the Queen Rat. The moment that the Queen Rat’s anger soared into the sky.

"Where are you looking, nyang?"

Noe suddenly appeared behind the Queen Rat and swallowed her. It was the activation of Soul Ingestion. The Queen Rat’s highest stat was weakened. The crisis of the Queen Rat started from here.

“Sublime Sword.”

The Queen Rat appeared again with fur wet with saliva. A demon stood in front of her confused self. It was a white-haired old demon.

Sakak-!

“Myaang!”

A swordsman who had even threatened a great demon. The Sublime Sword struck the Queen Rat’s chest. The Queen Rat screamed as she suffered a great deal of damage and Grid in the sky pounced. He fired 50 Magic Missiles as well as Pagma’s Swordsmanship, Pinnacle Kill. Then...

Kuwaaaaaaang!

The past 2 years. The center of the monster community that made the people of Pangea tremble was ruined. It was an extraordinary accomplishment created by a single man passing by the East Continent.

Chapter 522

[The +8 Holy Light Gloves's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated!]

[The +9 Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill '5 Joint Attacks' to be generated!]

[The +9 Failure's option effect is activated, causing the skill 'Bisect' to be used!]

[Pinnacle Kill has completely ignored the target's attack!]

[Critical!]

[The effect of the title 'Death in One Shot!' has been activated, adding 30% critical damage!]

[The weak spot has been attacked! Further damage will be dealt!!]

[Magic Missile has pierced the target.]

[Magic Missile has pierced the target.]

[Magic Missile...]

...

...

[You have dealt 23,230,470 damage to the target.]

[You have renewed the highest damage record!]

[The effectiveness of the title: 'Death in One Shot' has increased. Critical damage will increase by 10%!]

[You are establishing unparalleled damage achievements. The protection of War God

Zeratul has slightly increased attack power, defense, and penetration power.]

[The blessings of God Dominion and War God Zeratul have combined to give the hidden passive skill 'God's Command.']

[God's Command]

Rating: SSS

The strongest passive attack power skill related to domain and ruling ability.

When using an attack skill, there is a 50% chance to reset the cooldown. Reuse of a reset skill within 3 seconds won't consume resources.

"Ugh...!"

The mass of notification windows was confusing. Grid dimly grasped that the notification windows contained positive contents. But he didn't have time to verify the details. The situation was desperate.

'Shit!'

40 minutes. He had been moving through the community for a long time. Then he consumed his stamina avoiding the Queen Rat's attacks while tying Alarm to Magic Missile. He freely took advantage of Alarm magic. But the result was the worst.

'What is this crazy health?'

He had been uneasy since he saw that the stat Noe took from the Queen Rat was stamina. The Queen Rat was a perfect tank-type boss monster and didn't die even after suffering heavy damage from Grid. She still had two-thirds of her health left. She was a monster with ridiculously high health.

"Pant... Pant... What the hell should I do against this rat?"

His stamina gauge was flashing. It was a warning that if he didn't take a break right

now, he would fall into a state of incapacity. But the monster. How could he rest when a boss monster was right in front of him?

"Noe, can you carry me and bring me away?"

"Nyahahat! I am the best demonic beast of hell! But I am too small to carry Master... Nyang."

"Kuk."

The best demonic beast of hell, a memphis. Grid had never once felt envious of other players since acquiring him. But at this moment, he felt envious.

'I would've been able to run away if I had a wyvern.'

The Queen Rat couldn't fly. If he had a bit more stamina remaining, Grid would be able to get away with Fly.

'Mana isn't a problem.'

His mana could be replenished by taking potions, but stamina could only recover naturally.

'I still lack the ability to manage my stamina.'

There was never an end to learning. While Grid was thinking about his own shortcomings.

"Muoong... Hu... man... The enemy of my clan..."

The Queen Rat on the ground twitched and started to get up. The smooth and beautiful fur was now dirty with sweat, blood, and dust. However, her momentum was stronger than before. Her eyes were filled with the desire to tear Grid apart.

"Human...! You are weakened! Myaang!"

Thump thump thump thump.

Grid's face became darker as the Queen Rat charged.

'It's difficult to avoid. I have no choice but to fight in the immortal state.'

But this wasn't an opponent that could be beaten in 5 seconds. He couldn't see any chance of victory. However.

Kkuok!

Grid tightened his grip on Failure. In addition, he summoned Magic Missile and Alarm. The raid might fail, but he was determined to fight his best to the last minute. Who cared if he failed? He just wanted to become stronger. Grid planned to gather as much information about the Queen Rat as possible and use it as a springboard for the future.

'If today's raid fails, it will be different next time!'

It was the moment when Grid's unique commitment appeared.

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Patience skill has been activated.]

[Concentration, stamina, and defense will rise to the extremes for one hour.]

A skill with terrible activation conditions. Since becoming Pagma's Descendant, he'd experienced the effect less than 10 times. There was a low probability of it activating when he was focused on making items, and then all his fatigue would disappear. The Legendary Blacksmith's Patience filled up Grid's flashing stamina gauge.

"Ah, really..."

A dark smile appeared on Grid's face as he felt the lightening of his body.

"This feels like fate. Go, God Hands."

It felt like he was born with the mission to destroy the big poisonous rats. It felt like he became the protagonist of the world at this moment. Grid aimed precisely at a gap in the Queen Rat, who lost her momentum because she was beaten by Mjolnir. He moved in the steps of a sword dance.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship!”

“Myaang!”

“Linked Kill!”

Jjejeong!

Jjeejeeong!

The Queen Rat had planned to crush Grid. The moment she was about to strike Grid’s head, Grid responded with a series of intense attacks.

[The hidden passive ‘God's Command’ has reset the cooldown of Linked Kill.]

“...Eh? Hidden passive?”

Grid realized that it was a skill he acquired a while ago that he hadn’t been able to look at! He was confused by it, but didn’t waste any time. He once again used Linked Kill on the Queen Rat who was floundering from the pain.

Jjeejeeong!

"Muaaaaang!"

Linked Kill didn’t have the effect of ignoring defense, but it boasted explosive damage. Unless the target had extremely high defense, it was expected that the damage of Linked Kill would be higher than Pinnacle Kill. This strong attack struck twice in a row. The Queen Rat’s momentum was broken.

“This male is so strong!”

The Queen Rat was dismayed to realized that Grid had hidden his power. The God Hands were constantly acting. They repeatedly caused stiffness in order to prevent any damage to Grid.

“Myaaaaaang!”

Peeng!

The Queen Rat broke through the sword and hammer bombardment. A powerful shock wave scattered Grid and the God Hands all over the place.

“Shit...! Don’t be fooled by the cute little monster!”

The God Hands and Grid were separated. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that his defense had weakened by at least two times without the protection of the God Hands. The Queen Rat narrowed the distance and brandished the trident at Grid.

Chaaeng!

Chaeeeeeng!

Grid swapped to Sword Ghost and desperately defended against the onslaught. However, the basic difference in levels made it impossible for him to defend against properly.

Puok!

He could no longer endure the force and was stabbed in the side.

Pepeok!

He missed the unusual trajectory of the tail and was hit in the cheek. There was a flashy kick that hit him on the chin, forcing his head back.

"Ku... ack!"

In the end, Grid allowed successive attacks and his health was exhausted, making him fall into the immortal state. Grid had only 5 seconds left. The worst result would happen if he couldn’t get rid of the Queen Rat in that time. Grid didn’t assume that the worst outcome would happen. It was the reason why he didn’t recall the God Hands in the distance.

[You have succeeded in combining the +9 Failure and the +9 Iyarugt!]

Mjolnir was a hammer and the God Hands were blacksmith's hands. The blacksmith's hands held the hammer and completed Item Combination in front of the portable furnace and anvil.

Peeok!

Pakak!

In the immortal state, Grid ignored the Queen Rat's attacks and looked at the finished product on the anvil. He avoided the trident of the Queen Rat and commanded the God Hands.

"Throw Mjolnir! Item Transformation! Lifaël's Spear."

Pepepepeok!

There was the additional acceleration effect of throwing Mjolnir, damaging the Queen Rat. Grid used this time to run to the portable furnace and grab the combined weapon.

"Pagma's Swordsmanship."

Grid used Blacksmith's Rage and started a sword dance. Beside him, 20 Magic Missiles and the four God Hands that transformed into Lifaël's Spear (Reproduction) aimed at the Queen Rat.

"Linked Kill Wave."

Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The blue and red energy blades, the 20 white flashes, and four golden spears shot at the Queen Rat. It wasn't over.

[The hidden passive 'God's Command' has reset the cooldown of Linked Kill Wave.]

“Linked Kill Wave.”

A new rain of energy blades was unleashed.

"Muaaaaang!"

The Queen Rat tried to resist, but was too late. The 0.3 seconds of stiffness caused by the thrown Mjolnir earlier was fatal.

Kuwaaaaang!

The central part of the monster community was caught up in an explosion.

[The ruler of the big poisonous rat community, the Queen Rat, has been defeated!]

[The first gateway in the north of Pangea has been dealt with!]

[The title ‘Pangea’s New Star’ has been acquired!]

[The Queen Rat’s Walnut has been acquired.]

[The Queen Rat’s Fur has been acquired.]

[5 blessed weapon enhancement orders have been acquired.]

[4 blessed armor enhancement orders have been acquired.]

[Idan’s Frying Pan has been acquired.]

[Your level has risen!]

“Pant... Pant...”

He improved in the second half of the raid and was able to succeed. All his stamina

was consumed in an instant and he couldn't bear it anymore, flopping down on the ground. The struggle was over, so he checked the titles and rewards that he had acquired. Joy appeared on his face.

Chapter 523

“Huh??”

Grid had question marks as he checked the information of the hidden passive skill God's Command. A bell rang. It was truly shocking.

“I-It is good but...”

This was why the cooldown of Linked Kill and Linked Kill Wave was reset.

‘Amazing!’

It truly had the best value. It was comparable to the time when he obtained Pagma's Descendant and the Legendary Great Magician classes.

‘I never thought Dominion's blessing would be such a big help.’

During the Pope Drevigo episode, he obtained blessings from Rebecca, Judar, and Dominion. All three blessings were on the pavranium and buffed Grid. Rebecca's Blessing increased the speed of health recovery by 300%, Dominion's Blessing increased attack power by 15%, and Judar's Blessing increased defense by 15%. At this point, Grid could make one guess.

‘Dominion's Blessing is one of the three major passive attack power buffs...’

Judar's Blessing was one of the three major passive defense buff and Rebecca's Blessing was one of the three major recovery buffs?

‘Isn't there little odds of getting all of them?’

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the acquisition requirements for God's Command were ridiculous. With God Dominion's blessing, he could gain unique damage achievements and receive Zeratul's favor? How many of the two billion users would meet these requirements? It was difficult to imagine the other passive skills that could be acquired from Judar and Rebecca's blessings.

'It's the same with domain and ruling ability.'

Grid had many unlucky experiences, so the effect of domain and ruling ability was far more fraudulent than God's Command.

'In the future, my enemies will acquire the domain and ruling ability. No, maybe they have already learned it.'

It was an obvious part of someone's repertoire. This damn world wouldn't let him off so easily.

'Will I later die from the domain and ruling ability?'

Of course, he didn't intend to let it happen so easily.

'From now on, I am invincible.'

Why? He had the good luck stat!

"Kuhuhuhut! I will show you the combination of God's Command and good luck!"

God's Command had a 50% chance of resetting the cooldown. What if the good luck stat affected it?

'There will be a higher than 50% chance of resetting the cooldown!'

Yes, just like a little while ago. There was a low probability of the skill cooldown being reset continuously. Grid believed in the good luck stat and aimed at the wrecked tent in front of him. He took a deep breath and fired Pagma's Swordsmanship, Wave. It was to confirm the effect of God's Command. But the effect that he expected didn't activate.

Grid was very confused, but reacted calmly.

"Hu... Hut! Well, it isn't a 100% chance. It can fail once in a while."

The good luck stat might be in bad condition. Grid controlled his heart. Then he fired Pagma's Swordsmanship, Link. The result? The effect of God's Command wasn't activated and the cooldown wasn't reset. It was the same when he used Kill and Pinnacle.

“Pant pant. This is really rotten.”

There was a sense of instability. In retrospect, the 5 Joint Attacks skill attached to the Holy Light Gloves and Failure had also barely been seen in the last few months. Unfortunately, Grid’s bad luck was so high that it exceeded his low good luck stat.

“No... Why? Why do I keep getting skills like this?”

A less fraudulent skill. He wanted to get a definite skill that didn’t rely on luck.

Flop!

Grid’s happiness turned to frustration. No matter how much he thought about it, he had trouble believing in God's Command. Grid came to a conclusion.

“I don’t need to be aware of this skill.”

He would just receive setbacks if he fought with the assumption that God's Command would activate. He would rather fight as usual and thank the gods if God’s Command activated.

“Yes... God's Command isn’t the only thing I got. I don’t need to be obsessed with it.”

There was the title of Pangea's New Star.

‘I hope it’s a title that increases my good luck.’

It was unfortunate because he felt like his luck would be bad forever. He desperately needed the good luck stat. Grid confirmed the information of the title.

[Pangea's New Star 1st Stage]

Stage 1: It is relatively easy to obtain information from the residents of Pangea.

* Every time you destroy a monster community formed in the north, the level and effectiveness of the title will increase.

“..”

It was really less than expected. Maybe he felt more disappointed after seeing the hidden passive God's Command.

“Hah...”

Grid sighed deeply and checked the items he received in turn.

[Blessed Weapon Enhancement Scroll]

A scroll used to enhance weapons.

The successful enhancement of a weapon will increase the enhancement value by +1.

If the enhancement fails, the strength of the weapon won't fall.

[Blessed Armor Enhancement Scroll]

A scroll used to enhance armor.

The successful enhancement of an armor will increase the enhancement value by +1.

If the enhancement fails, the strength of the armor won't fall.

“...?”

So far, Grid had thought of blessed enhanced scrolls as enhancement stones. Unlike the West Continent, the East Continent didn't use an ore for enhancement. It was an item with the same effect, but had a different name and appearance. But that wasn't it at all. The blessed enhancement scrolls weren't as strong in enhancement. However, they had tremendous stability.

'Wow, wouldn't conglomerates buy this for a huge price?'

The success rate of enhancing items was in the decimals. A person could try 100 times and fail 100 times. But the burden on players when enhancement failed wasn't just a loss in money. The enhancement value of the item would drop every time it failed. That was the biggest problem. But this scroll had the effect of protecting the enhancement value. Wouldn't the chaebols be willing to spend billions on the blessed enhancement scroll to reach +10?

'They can't afford to miss this.'

Wouldn't it sell for at least 10 million won per scroll?

'What 10 million? I might sell in the billions.'

The scroll was like a talisman. A language similar to Chinese characters was written on the centre and it could only be obtained on the East Continent.

'An item that hasn't been released on the market yet. Its value will be absurd.'

It wasn't necessary to dispose of the item right away, since Grid gained stability after becoming a landlord. He could watch the trends of the auction house and sell it at the price he wanted, or he could use it himself. Grid checked the next item. It was an item dropped by the Strong Male Rat.

[Strong Male Rat's Gallbladder]

A very big and bitter gallbladder.

You can fall into shock if you take too much.

However, if it is endured, resistance to poisoning and confusion will permanently increase by 0.5%.

Weight: 4

[Strong Male Rat's Heart]

A heart filled with the natural strength of the Strong Male Rat.

It is why the Strong Male Rat is so strong.

Once consumed, strength will permanently increase by 5.

Weight: 2

"Mini elixir!"

He hadn't obtained any elixirs despite killing so many vampires. The effect was halved compared to normal elixirs, but he would gladly eat it to permanently increase his strength stat. Grid took the heart without hesitation and packed the gallbladder into the inventory. The phrase 'the possibility of shock' was annoying, but he was planning to sell it to the Overgeared members.

'The items dropped by the intermediate boss are great. It should be the same with the Queen Rat's items.'

Lululala~

Grid hummed in anticipation. He checked the items dropped by the Queen Rat without hesitation.

[The Queen Rat's Walnut]

A walnut that the Queen Rat stored for a quick meal.

Weight: 1

"...?"

It was very embarrassing. Grid was stunned for a moment before using the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill.

Ttiring~

[A hidden function doesn't exist.]

"Shit."

A walnut soaked in saliva. It stunk like the hamsters' saliva, so Grid threw it away. It was absurd that a boss dropped a junk item. The angry Grid appraised the next item.

[Queen Rat's Fur]

The Queen Rat's fur is called the best fur and has a very high value.

But the Queen Rat is a fierce and powerful monster.

Obtaining the fur of the Queen Rat is like picking a star from the sky.

Weight: 120

[This item has a hidden function.]

[It is rumored that the lord is looking for the fur of the Queen Rat!]

"...This is better."

It was obvious that it could be sold for an expensive price because it was one of the finest leather materials. But Grid wanted to use it himself rather than sell it.

'Let's make a legendary leather armor.'

He didn't have much interest in the quest. It was too much to waste this precious material on a quest.

'Obviously, it is a quest that requires a rare item, so the rewards are likely to be enormous.'

But there was a chance that the rewards wouldn't benefit him, so it was better for him to use it directly. Grid already feel deeply betrayed by the odds of God's Command activating and the walnut. Finally, he was amazed by Idan's Frying Pan.

"This is real?"

The chef who couldn't cook, Idan. To be honest, Grid didn't recognize this quest as important. He coveted the 30% experience, but it was faster to hunt monsters to level up than to waste time searching for the frying pan. The experience given by the monsters of the East Continent was enormous.

But now that idea had changed. Grid placed tremendous significance on Idan's quest.

'The experience is just a side benefit.'

He had to increase his affinity with Idan. The enlightened Grid rushed back to Pangea.

Chapter 524

Players no longer discussed the Seven Guilds.

One force was stronger than the Seven Guilds combined. From that time on, the Seven Guilds lost their majesty. Far from getting the title of the strongest, the Seven Guilds gradually declined. They were more inundated with requests to leave than to join.

“We will remove ourselves from the alliance.”

The French representative, Bondre.

Until he met Grid in the National Competition, he was the 1st ranked ice mystic with the nickname of ‘undefeated.’ He was also the master of the strongest magician group, Ice Flower. Now he expressed his intention to withdraw from the alliance.

The leaders of the guilds in the Seven Guilds didn’t stop him. However, Bondre’s declaration of withdrawal became an ignition point. The other guild masters also declared their intentions to leave the alliance. It wasn’t necessary to obsess over the alliance that had become obsolete.

Zibal, the leader of the alliance, was the same.

“I won’t stop them.”

Zibal had changed since the 2nd National Competition. In raids and hunting, he didn’t doubt that he was the best. However, he changed his perception after being beaten by Grid. He wasn’t the best. He wasn’t qualified to be self-confident and to force others.

Zibal was no longer obsessed with the Seven Guilds. He chose to grow in order to regain his past glory. Now he was about to step foot in the Behen Archipelago. After confirming that the guilds had withdrawn from the alliance, he laughed and entered the Behen Archipelago.



"What will happen to us now?"

The Ice Flower Guild was somewhat uneasy. Ice Flower. They were an elite group of magicians and there were only 30 of them. It was obvious that many uncomfortable things would happen if they left the alliance. They had complicated relationships with some people due to disputes, and the guild had no production players, so item trading was disadvantageous for them.

Bondre reassured the worried guild members.

"We will go to the god of war. This will make our lives much better than before and we will be guaranteed a brilliant future."

"God of war?"

"Who is it?"

Bondre explained to the bewildered guild members. "Ares. An unofficial ranker with a unique ability. He's equivalent to Grid."

"Wow..."

How strong was he that their master Bondre would compare him to Grid? The Ice Flower Guild members were incredulous.

"Then why is he unknown?"

"Yes. This is the first time I've heard of him."

"Satisfy is wide. Do you know all the people in every field in the world in reality? It's unknown how many of them there actually are. In that sense, Satisfy is like reality."

In fact, Bondre also had no idea who Ares was not long ago. However, Scott contacted him three days ago and told him about Ares. Bondre had been shocked the moment he saw the information.

"The world is wide and there's a lot of chaos."

Bondre heard a strange voice as he thought about joining Ares' guild.

"Yes, the world is wide. But you're all under my feet."

"Who?"

The Ice Flower Guild instantly became alert. They were embarrassed by the dozens of skeletons blocking the way back to their territory. The voice of the unfamiliar man was heard again as they perceived the danger and started to cast spells.

"Bondre, become a sacrifice of the king."

Chill.

Bondre and the Ice Flower Guild members got chills at the same time. The madness in the voice of the unidentified man made them feel an instinctive fear.

'Entering a fear state just from speaking?'

Boss monster?

'A boss appeared on the road where thousands of people travelled every day?'

It was ridiculous.

"Reveal yourself!"

Bondre finished casting the level 8 Ice Cutter and fired the magic. It was a strike aimed directly at the location of the voice.

Jeeeong!

The sharp ice blade flying through the air stopped. Then it shattered. It was due to the curtain of darkness that was instantly created.

'My magic was so easily blocked?'

Swaaah.

In the wreckage of the sparkling ice crystals.

“Agnus?”

Chwaaaaak!

Bondre was shocked as he saw the man who appeared from the dark curtain.

Agnus. After the top ranked players like Kraugel, Zibal, and Yura disappeared from the rankings, he had risen to 3rd place. In addition, he was the rumored psychopath that even Kraugel avoided.

“Kikikik!”

His eyes shone gold as he looked at Bondre like a frightened rat.



"The hunting grounds are far from the city. I should prepare a return scroll next time I go."

Originally, Grid planned to return to Pangea when it was time for the smithy competition. But his plans changed the moment he found Idan's Frying Pan and he returned to Pangea. It was imperative to raise affinity with Idan. The reason was the information of the frying pan.

[Idan's Frying Pan]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 35/260 Attack Power: 89

* When used, Intermediate Cooking Lv. 2 will be created.

The moment it is used, the person will become a seasoned chef!

It is the frying pan that has been used for centuries by the Idan family, who has a philosophy of cooking.

It is optimized to draw out a unique taste from the ingredients.

In addition, special events sometimes occur because the frying pan contains the desires of the elders of cooking.

When an Idan family member cooks with this frying pan, there is a high probability that food with a buffing ability will be created and a low probability that food that increases stats will be created.

However, the premise is that you eat all the food without leaving anything behind.

Conditions of use: Beginner cooking master. A special effect will occur only when an Idan family member uses it.

Weight: 40

'I don't know about the taste, but this is why Kraugel ate it four times.'

Idan. He was a golden goose who would give birth to elixirs. The chef might make bad food, but his value was astronomical. A one in a million talented person.

Grid decided. He would leave here with Idan as his personal chef!

"Idan!"

Pangea's North Street. Grid ran to Idan's restaurant and immediately asked the waitress working there.

"Where is Idan?"

"The boss went out to obtain ingredients."

"Can't he get the ingredients delivered?"

"Yes, there's no contractor who will deliver a rotten liver from a jiangshi."

"Jiangshi rotten liver?"

A chill went down Grid's spine. Idan's Frying Pan was optimized to draw out the taste of ingredients. What if he cooked a jiangshi rotten liver?

‘...Really a mess.’

It was crazy. His eyes darkened.

‘This is crazy... Why is he cooking rotten liver?’

Even...

‘It’s the body of a jiangshi?’

If he took Idan as a full time chef, would he have to eat such ridiculous dishes every time?

‘...No, that’s impossible.’

Idan couldn’t make strange dishes every time. He had to make some ordinary dishes.

‘I have to eat. If not, I’ll ask him to make it for me.’

Grid couldn’t believe it and asked the employee again.

“Where is the jiangshi?”

“If you go out the south gate and head north, a cemetery will appear. There’s an infestation there.”

"Okay, Idan is there?"

The moment Grid verified the information and was about to leave the restaurant.

“Umm? You are?”

Idan returned to the restaurant. There was a basket filled with something black in his hands. Grid ignored the rotten smell and handed the frying pan to Idan.

“Here’s what I promised you.”

"Hrmm."

It was the hard to regain family heirloom. Did he not expect it to be found in just two

days? Idan looked at the frying pan with a questionable expression before cheering.

“Oh...! Ohh! Ohhhh! Unbelievable! You found my family’s heirloom so quickly!”

Idan was genuinely pleased. The moment he held the frying pan, a notification window appeared in front of Grid.

[The quest Find the Traces of the Great Hero! has been completed.]

[30% character experience has been paid as compensation.]

[Affinity with Idan has increased by 10.]

“Eh?”

Affinity +10? Affinity only increased by 10 despite returning a family heirloom? Grid thought it was unexpected.

‘Shouldn’t it increase by at least 50?’

Idan guided the confused Grid to a table.

"Have you not eaten yet? Now, sit down. I will treat the person who brought back my family’s heirloom to a wonderful dinner.”

“Ah, yes.”

Hopefully, this was a chance to eat food that increased his stats. Grid hesitantly sat down and belatedly said something.

"Please note that I have a liver allergy.”

In other words, don’t bring out a dish made with jiangshi liver! Idan’s expression became as cold as ice.

“Y... es? Is that so?”

Idan clicked his tongue and headed to the kitchen. His unfriendly demeanor made Grid think the worst.

'Don't tell me that my affinity just fell?'

It was likely that Idan was a NPC who only liked people who ate his dishes.

'It is almost certain.'

It was the reason why returning Idan's Frying Pan only raised affinity by 10. On the first day they met, Grid left behind a lot of the orc cream pie and his affinity must've fallen.

'This truly sucks.'

In order to recruit Idan as a full time chef, a high affinity was required. How could he increase his affinity without having to eat the food that Idan made? The moment Grid was feeling frustrated.

"This is my signature dish that I cooked just for you, japchae."

"..."

Idan handed a dish of japchae to Grid. Japchae. It was a favorite dish for South Koreans, and clearly Grid as well.

'Phew, thank goodness. It isn't hard to make japchae delicious.'

Vegetables, meat, and japchae noodles. Grid grasped a fair amount with his chopsticks and shoved it into his mouth without hesitation. Then he spat it out as soon as he ate it. The vegetables tasted of soil and were really crunchy. The slightly cooked pork was cold and hard. The noodles were chewy. There wasn't even any strange ingredients in it. The original tastes of the ingredients were very strong and didn't mix together.

"No, this..."

He was supposed to eat this? Grid was about to curse reflexively when he stopped. It was because Idan's eyes were glaring at the japchae that he had spat out.

"Did you spit it out because it didn't fit your tastes?"

“Nope. It’s delicious. I was so surprised by the delicious taste that I spat it out a little bit.”

Endure. Grid blocked his nose. Then he shoved all of the japchae in his mouth at once.

Chew chew.

Grid chewed the japchae with a pale face while Idan asked.

"Why are you blocking your nose while eating?"

"It’s my eating habit."

"Huh, really? What an unusual eating habit."

‘Your dishes are more unusual... ’

Grid sweated as he barely endured it.

[The effect of eating Idan’s dish has permanently increased intelligence by 1.]

“Ah!”

It was the moment when Grid’s sorrow was larger than his joy.

Chapter 525

‘I was wondering why there wasn’t a function to turn off taste every time I drank a bitter potion...’

The bitter taste of potions was one of the barriers of entry in Satisfy. In particular, a few people tried to turn off their taste function because they disliked the bitter taste. But the S.A. Group didn’t accept their request. The sense of taste was one of Satisfy’s best features that created a sense of reality. They didn’t want to give the players the authority to lower their immersion. But at this moment, Grid interpreted it differently.

‘I can’t turn off the taste function and have to suffer from eating the food that Idan made... In other words, it sucks.’

There was a pervert among the Satisfy crew. Grid was sure of it and asked the employee for a cup of tea. He needed something to get rid of the subtle sensation of dirt on his tongue.

“Water... No, I don’t think that will work. Give me the cheapest herbal tea.”

"The cheapest herbal tea?"

“Yes.”

“You don’t care about the smell or the taste? If you want to order tea based on the price, I recommend our citron tea. That’s the cheapest. It’s also delicious.”

“Hoh?”

Grid belatedly noticed the employee that he hadn’t paid much attention to. The girl was a considerable beauty whose emotions were hard to read, but she was only an A cup. It meant that Grid didn’t recognize her as a woman. But Grid had a great sense of liking towards her.

‘She’s an NPC with considerable intelligence.’

It was uncommon for NPCs in hospitality to know exactly what the customer wanted. Satisfy's artificial intelligence was perfect, but there was a big difference between NPCs. Store employee NPCs usually had slightly better intelligence than Jude. Given these points, the female waitress working in Idan's restaurant was a very interesting NPC.

'Could she be a pearl in the mud?'

If Grid was a regular player, he wouldn't have noticed Yang Fei's unusual point. But unlike usual players, Grid concentrated heavily on NPCs. That's why he knew.

"Yes, a cup of citron tea please."

"Yes."

Yang Fei and Idan's attention dispersed after Grid ordered the tea.

Clink.

Grid took out the Great Lord's Sword from the inventory and used Character Observation.

Ttiring~

Name: Yang Fei

Age: 17 Gender: Female

Occupation: Restaurant Employee

Title: Quick-witted Person

A commoner born in an ordinary household with 1 son and 14 daughters.

As the 7th daughter among 14, Yang Fei had to take care of her sisters.

Since she was born and raised in a home where there was a struggle over just one bean, her survival skills are remarkable.

Level: 53

Strength: 22/99 Stamina: 92/510

Agility: 65/250 Intelligence: 204/1,090

Dexterity: 139/650 Charm: 53/150

Skills: Hospitality (A), Housework (A), Adaptability (S), Making a Living Detection (SS)

"..."

Even talented knights rarely had S-grade skills. It was like a bean growing in the middle of a drought. However, Yang Fei had an S-grade and SS-grade skill. She was a mere employee. Were all the NPCs on the East Continent like this? Don't speak nonsense. Yang Fei was just special.

'I have to bring her with me when I return to the West Continent.'

It would be best to leave her as a maid for Irene and Lord, but it was a waste because her intelligence was very high for a mere maid.

'In particular, there is the Making a Living Detection skill.'

Grid decided.

'Yes, I will make her Rabbit's deputy.'

Changing sand to a special remedy and selling it, or only paying Piaro 73 silver. For Rabbit, who was eagerly searching for ways to make a living, Yang Fei's Making a Living Detection skill was a great talent.

'It's like giving him wings!'

A huge smile. Grid was happy about finding new talents. He washed away the memory of eating poisonous food and laughed widely. Idan saw it and misunderstood.

'This friend...'

Had there ever been anyone who laughed while eating his food? This was the first time since the little hero Kraugel.

‘I had a good feeling since the first time we met.’

Grid had no status in the East Continent. He was just a traveller. However, Grid had a high dignity and charm stat. It was easy to gain affinity with NPCs, even if he acted tactless. This was the reason why the famous Idan was talkative since he first met Grid.

That’s right. Originally, it wasn’t easy to receive quests from Idan. But Grid wasn’t aware of this fact. Only 31 players had gone to the East Continent. There was no information available about it.

“Hrmm... You.”

“Huh?”

Grid jumped with surprise as Yang Fei put the tea in front of him. He was worried about Idan misunderstanding again.

‘Will he wonder why I am rinsing my mouth after eating?’

There was no mistake. The affinity dropped again.

‘Shit, I’m lacking subtlety.’

Surprising, Grid realized that it was one of his problems. He smiled nervously as Idan spoke.

“Smiling so happily after eating the meal I made. You are a true gourmet and you are polite to the chef.”

‘What is this nonsense?’

The chef should be polite to their customers.

‘You can’t make food at all.’

Grid wanted to say, but he maintained his smile. It was in an effort to get Idan’s liking. His effort succeeded.

“You are a foreigner... Do you plan to stay in Pangea for a few days? If you don’t mind, I’d like to provide you with three meals a day. It’s in return for recovering my frying pan.”

“Ah...”

This was what he really wanted. Grid’s goal was to accumulate a lasting relationship with Idan and consume his food. At this moment, Idan was making a promise to cook for Grid. The situation was better than he expected. But Grid...

‘...Why aren’t I happy?’

Grid got goosebumps at having to eat Idan’s food three times a day. He stared into the air for a moment. Then he spoke with a grin.

"Yes, I will be honored."

“Ohh! Indeed! I knew you would appreciate it!”

“...Ah, for reference, I like chicken, beef, and eggs.”

They were ingredients that couldn’t be tasteless no matter how bad the chef. Idan readily agreed to Grid’s words.

“Um, okay. I will prepare your three meals a day using these ingredients.”

"It's appreciated!"

Grid was finally able to truly laugh.



During this time with Idan, Grid paid attention to his relationship with Yang Fei. He tried to build up affinity with her using glances and words.

The result.

"Goodbye."

Yang Fei said goodbye to Grid at the entrance of the restaurant. Grid smiled as nicely

as possible.

"Yes, thank you. I'll come again in the evening."

The first friend in Grid's life was an NPC. Even his wife and friends were NPCs. It meant he was an expert when dealing with NPCs. He was confident that he could quickly raise his affinity with Yang Fei. But in reality, it was only half right. It was true that Yang Fei was started to like Grid better, but it wasn't for the reason he thought.

She had the Making a Living Detection skill. She was aware of Grid's nature.

'A customer who orders without looking at the menu.'

Grid had ordered the cheapest tea. He never asked for the menu. Yang Fei had a chance to deceive him. In fact, it wasn't the cheapest tea, but the second cheapest.

'Selling citron tea every time he comes in...'

It seemed she would barely be able to receive this month's salary. She didn't have to let her thoughtless sisters and brother starve.

'Sigh.' Grid sighed as he watched Yang Fei. 'I am lacking impact. It's time to deepen this relationship.'

Grid released the power of his hands.

"Yang Fei, I think that your shoulders are too tense. Come here."

"...?"

All of a sudden, touching her shoulders? Yang Fei tilted her head with confusion. Grid exerted his legendary hand techniques. He approached Yang Fei in an instant, aiming precisely at her shoulders and pressing firmly. Yang Fei's expressionless face changed for the first time.

"Ahak!"

Grid saw Yang Fei as a young girl, but based on Satisfy, she was at an age to marry. However, Yang Fei wasn't in a position to dream about marriage. Her sisters had to marry and leave the house first. In this case, it was likely that she would miss

her prime age to marry. Yang Fei thought she would never feel the happiness of a woman for her whole life. But right now...

'Ahh, this feeling must be...!'

She had to feed her family, not think about romance. She only knew theories about relationships with men. Now, she finally experienced it in reality. Every time Grid's fingertips touched her skin, she could feel the same sensation she got when reading books. Yes, this feeling...

Omitted.

"Hah... Hah..."

The expressionless face was gone. Only joy filled Yang Fei's face as she flushed and gasped for breath. Her moist and trembling eyes stared at Grid.

"How is it? Did your fatigue go away?"

"...Yes."

"I'm glad. I'll do it whenever we meet."

"...!"

It was a massage for Grid, but Yang Fei thought differently.

'Doing this naughty act every time we meet...?'

It was embarrassing. But she couldn't refuse.

'Ah, I have become corrupt.'

Yang Fei was feeling confused.

On the other hand, Grid headed for the White Hammer smithy. He didn't ask for any accommodations. For him, the smithy was the best place to stay and work.

'There are 15 hours left until the blacksmith competition. I will trim the Queen Rat's Fur and eat Idan's dishes.'



"Did you see the system message from two days ago?"

"Of course. Wasn't there the message about the 31st visitor?"

"That's right. He's alone."

"He must have little information about the East Continent, which is why he dared come alone."

"How foolish. Kukuk, I don't know who he is, but it's good. We can eat properly."

A pub in Pangea. Players were sitting in a corner and laughing wickedly.

Chapter 526

The means of moving from the West Continent to the East Continent was estimated to be very diverse. But to date, the only clear method was to use the Behen Archipelago.

This was a difficult task.

How many people had used the Behen Archipelago to cross over to the East Continent? Over the past three years, there had been only 30. This was 30 out of two billion users. Behen Archipelago was a one player instant dungeon. It was an area difficult to break through, making a person feel pride just from reaching the 10th island.

In other words, the players who made it to the East Continent were great. Of course, there were some exceptions. There were a few 'lucky' enough to meet Fog Island early on and managed to cross over to the East Continent.



'I was the strongest on the West Continent.'

'Who would've imagined that I couldn't even leave the starter village?'

'Shit, my bad luck. If I knew the East Continent was this type of place, I would've never come.'

'I thought I was lucky to meet Fog Island earlier than others... '

A shabby tavern on Pangea's North Street. There were some men who were lamenting. The four people sitting down at a table and drinking were all players. They were level 310 'beginners' who arrived on the East Continent a month ago, but hadn't yet escaped Pangea.

"That damn Kraugel."

The ultimate goal they had when they quickly crossed to the East Continent. It wasn't just levelling. By clearing new content first, they would monopolize all types of titles,

skills, and hidden items. This was the goal they pursued on the East Continent. But it was too late by the time they arrived on the East Continent.

Pangea, the starter village in the East Continent, had already been swept away by Kraugel. Pangea entered a new episode in the aftermath and the difficulty rose exponentially.

“The moment that a player comes from the West Continent, Pangea will experience a crisis. That player will become a hero by repelling the monsters that invaded Pangea...”

Once again, the first person had the advantage. It was clear that as the first visitor to Pangea, Kraugel received a huge benefit. Due to that, they became the dogs chasing after the chicken.

‘How rotten... I’ve been in Pangea for a month and never once received a special quest. Kraugel alone obtained all the crucial quests.’

‘It would be best to leave Pangea and advance into a new territory, but... ’

The monsters in the north had been growing steadily since being defeated by Kraugel. Now they were too strong.

‘With our skills, it will be hard to move north... ’

‘Ah, that asshole Kraugel.’

They couldn’t achieve their original purpose in the present Pangea. Kraugel had cleared most of the hidden quests and the environment became too difficult. Anyway, moving to a new area was the best way. The problem was that it was impossible to move outside Pangea. They had to move north, but it wasn’t possible because the big and powerful hamsters were spread out in the north.

“There are quests to run errands in the neighborhood and also to catch monsters near here, so the levelling up is quite good.”

"Yes, we’re definitely growing. We’re much better than when we first came here. The renowned Seven Guilds and rankers of Overgeared are probably weaker than us.”

“The East Continent is great. But we’ll just die in front of the Queen Rat. We can’t catch the Queen Rat.”

But.

“If we take advantage of the new arrival on the East Continent, we’ll be able to break through the monster community while the Queen Rat is distracted.”

They hadn’t just been playing around during the past month. They completed all types of miscellaneous quests in order to discover the weakness of the Queen Rat. Then they achieved results. The Queen Rat was partial to the ‘golden walnut.’

“Did you obtained the promised number of golden walnuts?”

"Yes, I have 10."

"It adds up to 40... This should be sufficient."

"Damn, what type of walnut is so expensive? I went broke from buying this."

"I also spent all my money playing this game."

As the name suggested, the golden walnut shone gold. The taste and nutritional value was comparable to ordinary walnuts, but the effect was enormous. When it was eaten, it increased all stats by 10% for an hour and had an average chance of permanently increasing a stat by 5 points. It was the strongest buff potion, while also demonstrating half the efficiency of an elixir. It was a fantastic thing that any player would want to have.

But the price was ridiculously expensive. The quantity was too limited because it was difficult to obtain. It was also a snack enjoyed by the nobles and royalty of all kingdoms on the East Continent. The price? A huge 160,000 gold. It was 160,000 gold for one! When converted to won, this small walnut cost at least 2 million won for one.

No matter how great, the ‘elixir’ effect wasn’t guaranteed. Unless a person was rich or a gambling addiction, they would never buy the golden walnut.

“Hah... We have to give such an expensive item to a monster.”

"Stop it. We have to consider it a worthy investment."

"Those who left Pangea clearly used this walnut."

We will be able to achieve our desired goal if we can get beyond Pangea, obtaining a land of gold. It was worth investing the money if they could obtain one good item, title, or skill. If they got stronger and returned to the West Continent, they would soon become rich. The players were filled with anticipation.

Then someone came up to them.

"Eh? Are you users?"

It was a black-haired man with a sturdy body. He was around 181cm tall. The wide shoulders, flat chest, and muscles made it an ideal body. Of course, this man was also a player. However, his ID was covered. It was because the man had covered up more than half his face with a black mask.

'This guy is the newbie who just came to the East Continent.'

'Our target came to find us, isn't this big?'

The players were excited, but tried not to show it. They greeted the man with a polite attitude.

"I'm surprised. I didn't expect to meet another player like us on the East Continent."

"You came all the way to the East Continent, so you must have a considerably high level? It's nice to meet you."

"But what is with that mask?"

"Is it an item for decoration? It's nice that it looks somewhat threatening. But isn't it uncomfortable to cover your vision...?"

There were greetings and questions. The man scratched his head in an awkward manner.

"I was called a sexual molester by the guards and chased, so I have to wear the mask for a while. I'm sorry, but please pretend to be my companions for a while."

"????"

Introducing himself as a molester at the beginning of the conversation? It wasn't

exactly sexual harassment but a 'molester.' Was there any thief who would admit that he was a thief? No. The fact that he wore the mask and was being chased by guards meant he really was a molester.

The players were embarrassed.

'I've heard rumors that there are players who molest NPCs in the game, but I never expected to meet such a trash person.'

The man who was a trash molester wore a bizarre laughing mask that covered half his face. That man was currently very upset. It happened after he gave Yang Fei a massage at the entrance of Idan's restaurant. He was chased by guards while heading to the smithy? He was framed as a molester who harassed women in public.

'Shit... What is this?'

His legendary dexterity. It was incredibly useful depending on the use, but the risk was also great. Grid realized that he should seal the use of his hands in public. He avoided the guards by entering the tavern and came across four players.

'Lane, Mook, Evan, and Oshihoz.'

The four players were strange. Since they crossed to the East Continent, they must at least have their third advancement. But their IDs and faces were unfamiliar, so they must be unofficial rankers.

'I met them by chance, but I should obtain some information from them.'

The Grid of the past would've tried to take advantage of them. But now Grid could have moderately good human relations like an ordinary person.

"Do you know any good hunting grounds? Sit at the bar and unburden your hearts."

'Oh.'

The eyes of the four players sparkled. It was a very nice situation because the prey approached by himself.

'It's tough since we don't know his identity.'

Maybe he was on guard and concealed his identity from the beginning. The players suppressed their curiosity in order to trap the man in the mask.

"Yes, we got a huge jackpot today."

"Ever since coming to the East Continent, it feels like being in heaven every day. We made a huge amount of money and experience."

"We know a lot of good hunting grounds. Well, since you're a skilled player who made it to the East Continent, your ability to find hunting grounds should be excellent."

Grid's eyes shone from behind the mask.

'Incredibly good hunting ground!'

Grid's ultimate goal behind coming to the East Continent was to level up. Grid had no choice but to be interested in these words.

'In fact, I have been on the East Continent for less than three days and don't know that much... '

If the players knew this truth, they might not let him in. Grid made a bluff. He couldn't expose his current situation. He needed to act with the dignity of the leader of Overgeared.

"Of course I know a few good hunting grounds. Do you want to share information with each other?"

'What would he know?'

The players knew when the masked man arrived on the East Continent. This newbie was trying to trick them without knowing he was the one being deceived.

"Ah, should we? It would be good for both of us. Okay. Players in a strange land should help each other out."

"That's right, that's right. The hunting grounds are very large and there won't be any damage from adding one more person."

The players smiled widely and spoke to Grid.

"We happened to finish our food and drinks while talking. We'll be happy to lead you to a hunting ground."

Grid readily accepted. "That sounds good. Later, I will share information about hunting grounds with you."

The players grinned wickedly at Grid. They left the tavern and headed northwards towards the community of big poisonous rats.

Grid was astonished.

'Ah, what? This is the good hunting ground?'

Certainly, the community of big poisonous rats was 'good.' But not after the Queen Rat was killed. After the Queen Rat died, the respawned big poisonous rats were much weaker. Their average level fell by 30 and they didn't give as much experience.

'I wanted a place other than here.'

Grid clicked his tongue.

'Heok? What the?'

'Why are the hamsters so weak?'

'It's so exhilarating. I don't know what changed with the hamsters, but it is likely that the Queen Rat is still strong. Has the illusion magic been used on the walnut?'

'Yes, there is no way for that guy to tell that this is a golden walnut. Even a top rated appraisal item will only display it as a simple walnut.'

It was good that a newbie who could become bait had appeared in front of them. The players believed their plan would be successful. Of course, it was a misunderstanding. A misunderstanding that was likely to be good for Grid.

Chapter 527

Mook had considered himself a lucky person. He had felt confident about this since encountering Fog Island on the 7th island of the Behen Archipelago. However, that idea had changed since coming to the East Continent. It was an environment different from what he expected. The difficulty was beyond imagination. Due to this, Mook was isolated in Pangea for a month.

'Ah, I really have no luck.'

He crossed over to the East Continent just to run errands for the NPCs and take care of easy mobs? The situation was different from what he imagined. It would have been better if he hadn't come here. The days when he was a high ranking player on the West Continent were much more interesting.

It was bad luck, not good luck, that he encountered Fog Island. This damn East Continent, he wanted to get away from it. But it wasn't a decision that could be easily made. Mook only had two East Continent Portal Scrolls. It was a phenomenon caused by lacking points because he encountered Fog Island too soon.

Mook spent his days in Pangea feeling frustration. Then that thought once again changed today.

'I am really lucky!'

Why had the hamsters weakened overnight?

'Heaven is helping me!'

The hamster hunt was very easy. Before, there were dangerous moments because he had to fight two every time. Then he would have to rest for a few minutes after hunting four or five. Even if he didn't manage his stamina or mana, the hamsters were so weak that he could hunt for 30 minutes without stopping.

Of course, the amount of experience that they gave was lower. However, the number of hamsters that could be hunted at the same time was greatly increased. In the process of advancing to the center of the monster community, they steadily gained

experience. The gallbladders also dropped constantly, so he could probably achieve a 30% poison and confusion resistance.

‘Should I just stay here and hunt? If I could increase my poison resistance to 30%, I will be able to catch the poisonous trolls on the West Continent that I couldn’t before.’

Honestly, the golden walnuts were too valuable to be wasted like this.

‘It’s better to save the golden walnuts... Isn’t this better?’

Even spoke as Mook started to feel conflicted. "We can raise our level on the West Continent. And the gallbladder of the big poisonous rats can be collected later. Don’t forget our purpose. Our real purpose is to gain titles, skills, and items first."

Lane agreed. "Evan is correct. Mook, don’t get bogged down by the immediate benefits. We have an obligation to escape from Pangea."

"It’s important to act quickly to monopolize various benefits first. The gap with the front runners can’t become bigger. We might be chasing after them forever."

Oshihoz' words broke Mook’s conflicted thoughts.

"That's right. Your words are correct."

The newbie who came to the East Continent with good timing a.k.a. the masked man. It was time to use him to leave Pangea. Mook controlled his mind again and checked the party window.

Lane - Level 311

Class: ???

Mook - Level 310

Class: ???

Evan- Level 312

Class: ???

Oshihoz - Level 310

Class: ???

??? - Level 320

Class: ???

Lane, Mook, Evan and Oshihoz got to know each other on the East Continent. They might be in the same position, but the time to get to know and trust each other was too short. They only occasionally established a party in order to challenge the big poisonous rat community. But even if they were in a party, they set their class to private like now. That's why the classes were just question marks.

However, Mook judged there was no need to be so vigilant.

'The PvP gap isn't that big between combat classes. The balance is right.'

It was disconcerting that the masked man was level 320. The skills that could be learned at level 320 were famous for being powerful. But there were four of them and he was alone. Even if the plan failed and their intentions were revealed, he wouldn't be able to face them...

'There is nothing dangerous!'

Mook concealed a wicked smile with his hand.

"Everybody, please wait."

They were close to the center of the community. It was night and the moon wasn't out. In the distance, the large tent of the Queen Rat could be seen.

"Half-face."

'Me?'

Was he called Half-face because of the half mask?

‘This naming sense...’

If he was going to have a nickname based on the mask, he would prefer something like Mask Man. Grid felt regret as he replied.

“Yes.”

"Do you see that big tent over there?"

“Yes.”

"The leader of the community lives there.”

‘I killed her.’

The respawn time for a field boss was approximately three days. In particular, the Queen Rat that Grid killed earlier was likely a named boss. As soon as the Queen Rat died, the big poisonous rats were weakened overall. It was likely that the future Queen Rat would be very weak.

It was unfortunate. Mook wasn’t aware that the Queen Rat had already been hunted. He’d never dreamt of it.

"It’s impossible to catch the leader with the number of people we have in our party. In particular, the Queen Rat is strong. How strong... Um, yes. Do you know the big name players like Kraugel, Zibal, and Grid? They wouldn’t be able to hunt it even if they formed a party.”

‘Why is my name at the end?’

His ego was pricked by his name being after Kraugel’s. Grid snapped out, "So?"

“Unfortunately, it’s our duty to defeat the leader. Why? It’s necessary to enter the fantasy hunting grounds much better than this.”

‘If that fantasy hunting ground is the next monster community... I can just go since the queen is already dead.’

He didn't bother speaking his thoughts. It would be annoying if he had to explain how he killed the Queen Rat.

'In the first place, I wonder how they were planning to defeat the Queen Rat.'

Grid was feeling interested when Mook handed him a small pouch.

"What's this?"

Mook let out a laugh at the question.

"Open it. It's just walnuts."

"Walnuts?"

"All of the big poisonous rats, including the Queen Rat, are partial to walnuts. It will lure them."

"Hmmm."

Grid opened the bag and saw that it really contained walnuts. They were walnuts in a perfect condition before being peeled. They were big with an extraordinarily smooth surface.

"Starting from now, set the walnuts at 2 meter intervals leading up to the entrance of the Queen Rat's tent. The Queen Rat will be attracted by the smell of the walnut and will be led away."

"You will leave the community during this gap?"

Grid's eyes flashed behind the mask.

'What? At this moment, he seems like an entirely different person... '

His eyes were fierce. It was like he was looking down at them with arrogance. To exaggerate it a little bit, he was like a king of heaven. The eyes behind the mask were similar to a raptor contemplating its prey. It was a force that felt difficult to resist. It happened because Grid was born with naturally sharp eyes and a high dignity stat.

"Haha..." Mook forgot to breathe in front of those eyes. Then he responded calmly

without losing his smile. "What are you saying? No. We naturally won't leave without you."

Grid's eyes returned to normal.

"Oh, what is this? Won't I become the target of the Queen Rat if I place the walnut at the entrance to the tent? Are you going to run away while I'm attacked?"

"No. The Queen Rat is only attracted to walnuts and won't notice you."

"How can I believe that? Why won't you play this role?"

"Haha, didn't I tell you? We know a lot of good hunting grounds. We always use this method to move to another fantasy hunting ground. Putting walnuts at the entrance to the Queen Rat's tent is something we do all the time. We want to give you this role so that you can experience what it is like to move to another hunting ground."

'Isn't this strange?'

It was impossible for it to be the truth. But Grid was filled with kindness. In the first place, the Queen Rat wasn't present. There was no danger and no reason to refuse, so Grid nodded.

"I understand. I will trust you and do my part."

"Good choice."

Mook looked at Grid with relief, while also having a nasty grin on his face.

'The Queen Rat does like walnuts. But she likes the flesh of humans more. She will try to taste you before the walnuts.'

Be the scapegoat as planned. In that gap, they would leave this place and say goodbye to Pangea! The blissful Mook's party left Grid behind. Grid looked at them in the distance and pulled out a walnut from the pouch.

"There's no need to scatter this on the ground for the Queen Rat."

It was better to eat the walnuts while moving to the next hunting ground. He had close to 3,000 strength. The hard walnut shell was useless in front of Grid's strong

fingers. He easily exposed the insides. It was amazing that the husk was completely powdered while the insides were fine. This was the result of Grid's legendary dexterity.

"Yum."

Grid placed the walnut in his mouth. At that moment.

'Delicious!'

Grid's eyes widened. As soon as the walnut was placed in his mouth, a unique nutty flavor exploded? Then sweetness spread as he chewed. It was so much better than Idan's food that Grid was in tears.

"I have to eat more... Eh?"

Grid swallowed one walnut and was placing his hand in the pouch when he stopped. He was completely stiff, like a stone statue. He was amazed at the incredible effects.

[You have eaten a golden walnut.]

[All stats will rise by 10% for one hour.]

[The kernel of the golden walnut is perfect without any damage. It provides a complete supply of nutrients.]

[Intelligence has risen permanently by 5.]

"...Eh?"

Grid couldn't understand the situation.

"Ah..."

Grid was filled with emotions. It was better than joy.

“Those people... They are big pushovers.”

They mistook this amazing walnut for common walnuts and tried to feed them to monsters? How pathetic. They couldn't even take care of their own rice bowls.

"Aigoo, tsk tsk. I don't think they're scammers."

Grid clicked his tongue and placed the walnut pouch to one side of the inventory. Of course, there was no way he would return the walnuts to Mook.

Chapter 528

“Legendary Blacksmith’s Appraisal.”

The walnut pouch in the corner of his inventory. Grid pulled out a single walnut from it and used his appraisal skill to determine the true identity.

[The blacksmith who became a legend can appraise items with an excellent discerning eye. If a hidden feature exists in the target item, it will be found.]

[6th grade illusion magic has been detected.]

[The illusion is useless in front of your eyes and scattered like a mirage.]

[The information about the walnut has been updated!]

[Golden Walnut]

Also called the blessing of nature.

It is a snack and remedy enjoyed by all nobles and royalty on the East Continent.

All stats will rise by 10% for one hour.

In addition, there is a very low probability of permanently increasing one stat by 5 points.

Weight: 0.1

[You have discovered a hidden feature!]

[Golden Walnut]

Also called the blessing of nature.

It is a snack and remedy enjoyed by all nobles and royalty on the East Continent.

Somewhere on the East Continent, there are creatures whose main food is this walnut.

All stats will rise by 10% for one hour.

In addition, there is a very low probability of permanently increasing one stat by 5 points. The better you shell the walnut, the more likely it is that your stats will permanently increase.

Weight: 0.1

This was huge. Grid's mouth widened. He shook with joy at the huge value of this walnut. Grid smiled and shook his head.

"The more I think about it, the poorer they are."

The golden walnuts were covered by illusion magic. They probably never knew. If they knew, they wouldn't have considered feeding it to a monster.

Grid pledged. 'They are pitiful pushovers. I should be nice to them.'

Grid was projecting his past self onto Mook's party. He felt a great sense of sympathy when he thought about what they suffered on the East Continent. Then he thought about himself.

'Who would've thought I would be so nice to people I met for the first time today? I am really too nice.'

Well, if he wasn't nice then he wouldn't sponsor X University 3,300 won a month. Grid truly believed he was nice.

'I'm not good enough to return the walnuts, but I'm still an angel.'

Grid was proud in his heart. He refrained from eating another golden walnut.

'Eat it sparingly. Before it's an elixir, it is the strongest buff potion.'

Bufs that raised stats usually had a duration of 1~10 minutes. On the other hand, the golden walnut had a buff duration of one hour. In addition, Grid knew of only one other buff potion that raised 'all stats' apart from the golden walnut. That's right, the Sweet Candy. A buff potion that could only be purchased five times per account from the Reputation Store, it was a fraudulent item that raised all stats by 30%.

'It's too precious to eat, unless I encounter a dragon. This walnut is the best buff potion. Therefore, eat it sparingly.'

Dragon! The strongest creature created by the S.A. Group that players couldn't hunt yet. Grid didn't want to encounter a dragon til his dying day. He planned to avoid it at all costs. But the world was still unknown. In particular, Grid had no luck. One day, Minerals Detector Minor might suddenly declare as he was searching around Reidan.

"I have found the best minerals in a dragon lair!"

"Then I can't go to that place..."

Please don't let that happen.

"Hmm?"

Grid was praying when he thought of something. Was there a way to secure a large amount of golden walnuts? His face suddenly darkened as he was thinking of a new plan. Before he knew it, the time for breakfast was approaching.

'Ah, XX.'

Grid had improved greatly since he started exercising. In Satisfy, the maximum stamina would be temporarily lowered if a player didn't eat three meals a day. They shouldn't skip meals. But Grid wanted to skip today's meals. His eyes were dark at the thought of eating Idan's dishes.

'No... Today will be different.'

He made it clear yesterday. He liked beef, chicken, and eggs. They would food

ingredients that were delicious even when not cooked well. Grid planned to use these ingredients so that Idan could make a dish that was better than dog food.

‘Hurry. I will eat and then go watch the competition.’

Still, he was slightly concerned about Mook’s party.

‘Well, there’s no Queen Rat left in the community.’

Step.

Grid turned and left for Pangea.



Darkness encroached on the big poisonous rat community. Dawn started to reveal its grand scale. Mook’s group felt disturbed from where they were hiding like dead mice.

"This is the time that the hamsters will wake up."

"What should we do? We’ll be isolated."

"What else? We can’t run away anymore, so we can only wait."

It had been 15 minutes since the masked man left. Soon, it would be time for the man to place the last walnut in front of the Queen Rat’s tent.

“One minute. Wait one more minute.”

"The moment that the masked man places the last golden walnut in front of the tent, the Queen Rat will wake up."

"All the big poisonous rats will chase after him."

The big poisonous rats had a funny habit. They had the ability to detect when the Queen Rat was in danger, even if they were far from her tent, and would chase after the intruder. That’s right. Mook’s group planned to escape while the Queen Rat and all the big poisonous rats were chasing Grid. Grid was the sacrificial lamb. However...

“Isn’t it strange?”

“Why is it so quiet?”

The expected time had passed and the big poisonous rats were still quiet. The health gauge of the masked man in the party window was still full. It meant the Queen Rat hadn't appeared and the masked man didn't fulfill his role properly.

"No, is he stupid enough to not place the walnuts properly?"

“Don't tell me... He figured out the value of the golden walnuts and ran away?”

“Don't speak such nonsense!”

“It's impossible. My illusion magic might last for only an hour, but it can block the best appraisal skills. It boasts a tremendous sophistication.”

“Then what is this situation? Why are the big poisonous rats so quiet?”

If the masked man succeeded in attracting the Queen Rat as scheduled, all the big poisonous rats should've popped out by now. But the rats were dead silent. Surely the masked man hadn't noticed their trap and ran away? Mook's group came up with the worst situation and became nervous. They started to talk in the party chat.

-Excuse me... Half-face?

-Where are you?

-What happened to the walnuts?

-Don't you need to lure the Queen Rat?

The person called Half-face! Grid belatedly replied to them.

-There is no Queen Rat, so you can move freely. I'm going to get some breakfast. Then I'm going.

[??? has left the party.]

"...??"

Mook's party was stunned. They couldn't understand Grid's words.

'There is no Queen Rat?'

'He withdrew from the party to eat breakfast?'

First of all, it didn't make sense that there was no Queen Rat. It was only possible if she had been raided in the past three days. The Queen Rat was raided? It was impossible. None of the players currently remaining in Pangea had the ability to catch the Queen Rat. There were four players still stuck in Pangea, which was Mook's group.

Oh, there was the masked man who joined a while ago. However, it was impossible for him to raid the Queen Rat alone.

'Dammit... What happened to the walnuts?'

It was extremely rare for a player to leave the party to eat food. Most of them cooked food and ate at the hunting ground. But this person withdrew from the party to eat breakfast. The situation was clear.

'We've been tricked!'

They were ruined. The masked man deceived them. They tried to strike him in the back of the head, only to be struck themselves.

"That guy... He knew our ulterior motives from the beginning!"

He pretended to be deceived and acted at the crucial timing to hit them in the back of the head. Evil and smart.

"Shit...! Shit!"

They were completely abandoned. The golden walnuts they spend all their money buying had disappeared. In a nutshell, they were ruined. Everyone was feeling frustrated when Mook gave them hope.

"Hey, wake up. No matter how clever he is, it's impossible for him to figure out the identity of the walnuts."

“That’s right! He might think that the golden walnuts are ordinary walnuts and abandon them on the side of the road!”

“Okay! We’ll search for the golden walnuts from now on! We will get revenge after getting back the walnuts!”

“Ohhh!”

They regained their hope and morale, but it was only for a moment.

“...By the way, how many walnuts are there in this large community?”

"This is the time when the big poisonous rats are the most active... How can we deal with them if they leave the tent in a group? They might be weakened, but it will be hard to deal with a large number of them."

"Above all, the biggest problem is the Queen Rat. She often wanders around the tents in the morning. We will die if we meet her."

"..."

It was a continuous cycle of frustration. What should they do? Mook thought about it and found an answer.

“We... We’ll hide and wait until it is their nap time.”

They had to hide for 10 hours until it was time for the rats to nap. They couldn’t move a single finger.

"Once they go to sleep, we’ll start the walnut search operation."

They could find the golden walnuts if they repeated this for around four days. Mook’s group breathed slowly as the hamsters left the tents one by one. There were tears in their eyes. It was the day they remembered that people shouldn’t do bad things.



"Right now, they should’ve passed on safely to the next hunting ground?"

Who would’ve known his raid of the Queen Rat would be a big help to Mook’s group?

It was something he had never thought about.

"This connection is strange... Huhut."

Grid was glad to help the poor people. He arrived at Pangea that was bustling for the festival and took off his mask. Then he was startled.

Chapter 529

"..."

Grid was surprised because the bustling crowd on the street all sat down. Tens of thousands of people. The festive atmosphere became as silent as a dead mouse. It was an unbelievable and unrealistic thing to experience.

‘Pagma?’

The cause of the sudden silence! Grid got goosebumps as he watched the group of people that appeared in the center of the street. The group walked past the bowing crowd. They wore blue daoist robes and had long black hair tied up. It was exactly the same appearance as the Pagma that Randy copied in the Mysterious Forest.

‘These people are?’

The men in robes boasted a beautiful appearance. Why did they look so much like Pagma, and why did people bow before them? Someone poked Grid’s side. It was a regular NPC. His head was bowed and he was shaking. It seemed like he was afraid to be noticed by the robed men.

"Not bowing before the yangban, are you crazy? Do you have 10 lives?"

"Yangban?"

"The residents of the Hwan Kingdom!"

‘The Hwan Kingdom...’

The kingdom that used the white phosphorous tree as their national tree. Grid bowed his head and asked the NPC.

"Is Pangea part of the Hwan Kingdom?"

“Tsk tsk. I should’ve known you were stupid the moment you didn’t bow in front of the yangban.”

"..."

"Pangea is part of the Cho Kingdom.

"Then why are you bowing to the yangban of the Hwan Kingdom?"

"What are you saying? Isn't it natural to bow to people who serve their kingdom? Do you not know this because you're stupid?"

"...?"

Did the Hwan Kingdom have the concept of a common kingdom?

'It seems like Pagma was born in the Hwan Kingdom... '

He was gradually finding out information. Grid decided not to fret about it.

"Hrmm."

At this moment, a yangban in blue robes passed by Grid and gave him a meaningful smile. Grid felt awe the moment he looked into the yangban's eyes. There was an unknown aura and overwhelming majesty that made his heart race.

[You have an urge to bow.]

[You have resisted.]

This was just because Grid met his eyes?

'Don't tell me... '

Grid gulped.

'The power of a legend?'

Grid was confused.

"Huhut."

There was coy laughter as the yangban left Grid's field of view.



Idan's restaurant.

"Would you like me to prepare the citron tea in advance?"

A beautiful girl reminiscent of a cat. The employee Yang Fei asked the question with an impassive expression. But Grid didn't answer. He was still thinking about the yangban that he encountered on the street.

'I'm certain. That's a legend-grade presence.'

When Grid first lent his body to Braham. Grid had been shocked and thrilled when seeing Braham gather all the mana. The yangban's presence matched Braham of that time.

'But... None of the legends were described as originating from the East Continent? It's just my guess that Pagma came from the East Continent.'

In the first place, there were nine legends. But the number of yangbans he saw today was over 10.

'Don't tell me that separate legends exist for the East Continent?'

Separate from the nine legends of the West Continent.

'...Ah, it's natural.'

The West and East Continents were isolated from each other. It stood to reason that they wouldn't share legends. It was right for them to be separate.

'Look at Lord.'

He was called a genius that represented the West Continent.

'Hey... This is really... '

The world became bigger. The powerhouses that couldn't be seen on the West Continent and in Hell overflowed in the East Continent. But Grid didn't feel frustrated. Rather, he found it interesting.

'In the future, I will be stronger.'

Even if he became stronger than he was now, he wouldn't be criticized for destroying the balance. In other words, it meant Grid had the confidence to be strong.

'I am a legend.'

He was always trying hard. Yes, like right now!

"Now! Sorry to keep you waiting!"

"..."

Idan cooked eggs for Grid's breakfast. The yolk was cooked to the point of being burnt, while the whites were raw.

"Crazy. It's hard to deliberately make this."

Grid couldn't help spitting out. Fortunately, Idan took it as a compliment.

"It took a lot more work than normal egg rolls. After separating the yolk and egg whites, I cooked only the yolk and poured the whites, using the concept of them as a sauce."

"...Don't you think you should cook them normally?"

"Aish, this person. How can you eat ordinary egg yolk and egg whites?"

"You can cook moderately..."

"I made this dish with a chef's heart of wanting to feed my guest the best egg. Using the soft egg whites to cover the hard yolk, isn't this new and ingenious?"

'You could start off with soft-boiled.'

It was surprisingly a dish not made out of malice. Grid really didn't want to eat it, but

he closed his eyes and poured the eggs into his mouth. The feeling of the egg whites wrapping around his teeth every time he chews made him feel bad. The smell of the egg spreading in his mouth made it hard to breathe and the unique flavour of the yolk disappeared after it was cooked too much, giving a feeling of chewing dry stone.

Gulp!

Grid wanted to spit it out but barely managed to swallow it, tasting sweet fruit at the end.

[You have received food poisoning from eating uncooked food.]

[You have resisted.]

[Stamina has risen permanently by 1.]

‘The food wasn’t cooked properly...’

But Idan was the serious problem. It was clear that Idan didn’t have a talent for cooking.

“Hah.”

Then Grid asked him.

“Why didn’t you use salt?”

It would’ve been a bit easier to eat. Idan felt and replied to Grid.

"Salt is bad for your health!"

‘You will die if you eat ramyun.’

“Here.”

Yang Fei served the citron tea to the grumbling Grid. She prepared it beforehand. Grid

lit up at the thought of rinsing his mouth with the tea. Grid looked at Yang Fei like she was an angel.

“Thank you.”

Gulp gulp.

Grid tried to get rid of the egg taste with the fragrant tea. Yang Fei spoke meaningfully as Grid’s face recovered its color.

“That... My legs are sore today.”

Yang Fei lifted her skirt slightly and exposed her white calves. It was a stimulating sight. But Grid wasn’t stimulated. For any woman under the age of 20. Grid didn’t recognize them as a woman unless they had a D cup.

“Yes, I will massage it with sincerity today.”

“...”

Grid spoke carelessly while Yang Fei’s face became like a carrot. She already had a body that couldn’t live without Grid’s hands.



“You came!”

A large stadium to the north of Pangea’s Castle. Grid visited the waiting room of the stadium that reminded him of the Coliseum and White of the White Hammer smithy welcomed him. White grabbed Grid’s hands tightly.

“Mr. Woodcutter, thanks to you, we can now create flames of the desired temperature with the white phosphorus wood. It will be your achievement if the White Hammer smithy wins the competition this year.”

‘Woodcutter?’

Grid thought it was strange but didn’t question it.

“What is the theme of the competition?”

Grid was interested from the perspective of a blacksmith and White replied.

“It’s the same as last year. It is to reproduce Pangea’s treasure that was lost in the war two years ago.”

“What’s the treasure?”

"Red Phoenix Bow. It’s a bow."

"Red Phoenix... Bow!"

Grid felt a strong interest. Red Phoenix Bow. Based on the name, a red phoenix... Then the bow would have powerful fire properties. It was highly likely that Jishuka would have a high compatibility with it.

‘This is a treasure of the East Continent, so the base attack power won’t be a joke. It would be nice to obtain the production design.’

It was virtually impossible to get a production design just by seeing the item being made. One in 10,000 blacksmiths couldn’t do it. But Grid was a legendary blacksmith, not an ordinary one. He could try it.

‘Of course, the probability of success is low.’

He would do his best as always. The excited Grid suddenly felt doubts.

"Why is the theme of the competition the same as last year?"

"Last year, the blacksmiths failed to reproduce the Red Phoenix Bow. The lord probably intends to keep the same theme until a perfect masterpiece is reproduced."

“What type of bow is the original Red Phoenix Bow? Do you have the design of the Red Phoenix Bow?”

“It is a bow based on one of the four patrons, the blue dragon, the white tiger, the black tortoise, and the red phoenix. It’s a bow that shows the amazing destructive power of fire. Of course, there’s no design. It has been lost since ancient times. We can only use our imagination to create it.”

"Hmmm..."

If it was a bow with the fire attribute, was a fire stone used as material?

'Melting down the fire stone and using it with iron... The iron bow originally boasts great destructive power... No, wait.'

This was the East Continent. He couldn't think about it with the perspective of a West Continent blacksmith.

'There might be another specialized material on the East Continent with the fire attribute... Ah!'

A sudden thought passed through Grid's head.

'The white phosphorus wood!'

Grid was convinced.

'I am the only one who can make the Red Phoenix Bow.'

Why? He was the only blacksmith in the world who could cut down the white phosphorus tree! Grid's eyes flashed.

"What benefits will be received from winning the competition?"

Greed was within Grid's shining eyes. A powerful greed that wanted to devour everything in the world! But White was blinded to Grid's nature.

'Oh, look at those passionate eyes!'

White misunderstood and explained the situation.

Chapter 530

“What benefits will be received from winning the competition?”

“We will be able to exclusively deliver battle gear to the lord for a year. We will also be featured in the recommendation to tourists and will earn a huge amount of revenue as a result.”

Pangea was twice as big as Reidan, the second largest city in the Eternal Kingdom. Unlike Reidan, it was constantly full and had a high floating population. The smithy that won this competition could indeed amass a large amount of wealth. They would be honored as the best blacksmiths of Pangea, so winning the blacksmith competition was the dream of all blacksmiths in Pangea. But that wasn't White's only purpose.

“And... We become qualified to enter the dungeon of the lord's castle.”

“The dungeon of the lord's castle?”

In fact, there were castles that contained dungeons. Chris' territory was an example. Chris was famous for having a vampire boss that appeared in his castle's underground dungeon and accumulating elixirs. As it happened, Grid's territories didn't have a private dungeon.

‘I heard that a castle's dungeon is also a good place to collect rare items...’

Lauel's strengthening Overgeared plan included the occupation of all such castles on the West Continent and monopolizing the dungeons.

‘It isn't feasible.’

Grid's eyes recovered from their greed. At the same time, they sharpened.

“What's in Pangea's dungeon?”

“Armored needle...”

“Armored needle?”

“The enemy who murdered my father, the monster that produces the ‘Silver Thread’ that all blacksmiths dream about.”

‘Thread made of silver?’

The silver thread sounded ordinary. But if it was simple silver thread, the blacksmiths of Pangea wouldn’t dream about obtaining it.

“It isn’t like normal silver thread?”

“It is silver thread obtained by the silver armor worn by the armored needles melting from their rotten blood. This silver thread is hardened by this process, repeating for many years. It’s said to never break and exerts mysterious effects.”

“Your father being killed by the armored needles...”

“It’s as you expect. My father won the competition several years ago, entered the dungeon to obtain the silver thread, and was killed by an armored needle.”

White’s father got into trouble when he entered the dungeon with the lord’s troops who regularly entered the dungeon. White was afraid that he would step on the same path as his father, but he was angrier and greedier than he was fearful.

“I will surely recreate the Red Phoenix Bow, win the competition, gain access to the dungeon, and gain resources from the lord. I will sweep away the armored needles and use the silver thread to make the White Hammer Smithy the best smithy. That was my father’s dream.”

“...Hmmm.”

Grid’s eyes changed once again as he looked at White. There was warmth in his eyes. Based on the humanitarian ideology of Pagma’s Descendant, Blacksmith’s Affection was expressed.

‘A blacksmith with dreams looks good.’

It was at that moment.

Ttiring~

[A quest has been created.]

[Win the Smithy Competition!]

Difficulty: SSS

You are the successor of Pagma's techniques and will! You have Pagma's humanitarian ideology of using 'blacksmithing to benefit other people.'

You are impressed with White, who is trying to make the White Hammer smithy the best smithy in Pangea for his father. Help White win the smithy competition!

The moment that the White Hammer smithy is crowned the best smithy in Pangea, you will have an absolute ally in Pangea.

Quest Clear Conditions: A unique or higher rated Restored Red Phoenix Bow.

Quest Reward: White's affinity will be MAX. The lord's affinity will rise by 30~80 points. Different compensation will be obtained depending on your affinity with the lord. The right to enter the dungeon of Pangea's castle. Your level will rise by one.

Quest Failure: Affinity with White will decline. Your reputation in Pangea will drop.

'Good.'

Grid's desire to participate in the competition grew. He had a reason and would even receive compensation, so there was no reason for Grid to refuse.

[Would you like to accept the quest?]

There were only two options in the notification window. YES or NO. Grid chose YES without hesitation.

“Now, Grid.”

White responded after the quest was accepted.

"In fact, I'm not confident about handling the white phosphorus wood properly. I am able to get better firepower than before thanks to it, but I can't completely control it. But as a legendary woodcutter, don't you also specialize in firewood? That... I'm asking despite the shame. Will you participate in this competition as a member of my smithy?"

"..."

A legendary blacksmith was mistaken for a woodcutter? Grid was embarrassed because the development was different than what he expected, but he nodded.

"I understand. I will help you."

"Ohh...! Ohh! Thank you! I really appreciate it!"

Of course, the legendary blacksmith was also good with the bellows. It wasn't difficult for Grid to handle fire.

'I just need to participate in the competition, no matter the manner.'

Once the competition began.

'I will take the lead.'



"Umm."

Han Seokbong. He was the descendant of a fallen noble family and had a poor childhood. But thanks to his wise mother, he was able to become a civil servant and rise in the ranks. Han Seokbong was appointed to help the king of the Cho Kingdom. It was said that the policies developed by Han Seokbong made the Cho Kingdom strong.

He was the genius who was appointed as lord of Pangea at the age of 50. The hero who raised his family name, a role model to the common people, and a national treasure,

he had been troubled in recent years. It was because of the loss of Pangea's treasure, the Red Phoenix Bow.

"In the end, the yangbans of the Hwan Kingdom moved!"

The four treasures that contained the power of a god.

The Blue Dragon Dao in the eastern Kaya Kingdom. The White Tiger Spear in the western Pa Kingdom. The Red Phoenix Bow in the southern Cho Kingdom. The Black Tortoise Jewel in the northern Xing Kingdom.

The Hwan Kingdom gave these four treasures to each kingdom and ordered them to protect them well. Now the Cho Kingdom had lost the Red Phoenix Bow. It was when Han Seokbong was the lord of Pangea.

'The yangban said they would give me half a year... '

If he couldn't regain the Red Phoenix Bow in half a year, Han Seokbong's safety wasn't the only problem. The Cho Kingdom had a lot of exchanges with the Hwan Kingdom, so it was likely the Hwan Kingdom would place severe restrictions for a few years. It was a situation where the status of the kingdom would plummet and become paralyzed.

"Hah!"

Han Seokbong felt resentment. Three years ago, an unidentified evil daoist priest invaded Pangea and stole the Red Phoenix Bow. Why did the Cho Kingdom have to be driven to a corner? 'If the Cho Kingdom is weakened, the northern Xing will obtain the greatest profit... However, it was unlikely that Xing would've caused this incident since they knew the importance of the four divine treasures.'

Maybe the enemy was within. There were only a few candidates who would benefit if the power of the Cho King weakened.

'Seok Hyungong.'

The king's younger brother.

'But he isn't bold and his support base is weak.'

In the worst case...

‘Maybe someone knew the meaning of the Red Phoenix Bow and desired it...’

In this case, they might also go after the Blue Dragon Dao, the White Tiger Spear, and the Black Tortoise Jewel. It was dangerous. The entire continent might fall into chaos.

‘No, this isn’t an issue I should worry about now.’

If the situation became serious, then the people of the Hwan Kingdom would come to solve it. Perhaps.

‘I just need to concentrate on regaining the Red Phoenix Bow.’

But he didn’t know where the Red Phoenix Bow was. Due to the monster community in the north, communication with the outside was limited. It was more realistic to create a new treasure that would replace the Red Phoenix Bow, so Han Seokbong placed hope in the blacksmiths of Pangea.

“Please... I hope you will recreate the Red Phoenix Bow this year.”

A tombstone made of white jade. The voice of an old woman entered his ears as he looked at the place where the Red Phoenix Bow would’ve been.

“Your face is becoming more anxious the more days that pass. Won’t it be more toxic if you feel meaningless anxiety?”

“Mother!”

Han Seokbong grasped the owner of the voice and rose from his seat. He was worried for his mother, who was 80 years old. She shouldn’t be coming all the way down here.

"Your knees will be sore if you keep going up and down the stairs."

Han Seokbong ran to his mother, helping her up as she handed him a writing brush.

“Your mother is still fine, so don’t be worried. Don’t forget that you must always be calm. Train your mind and body. Sigh.”

Han Seokbong’s mother blew out the candles placed around the white jade tombstone.

Then she sat down in the darkened room.

"From now on, I will slice some rice cakes, so calm yourself."

"Yes...! I understand, Mother!"

His mother had always been by his side since childhood. She appeared whenever he was feeling confused and anxious.

'Once I start writing things down, my head always clears and my mind calms down.'

Han Seokbong smiled cheerfully and started doing calligraphy. Writing in darkness was a new development. It was natural for the handwriting to be poor.

"Ahat!"

Han Seokbong's mother cut her finger while slicing the rice cake. It was something that frequently happened and it was just a small cut.



"Hey! Who is this? Isn't it the dark White from the White Hammer smithy?"

An hour before the competition. A guest came to the White Hammer blacksmiths who were gathering the materials to be used in this competition. It was the owner of the Blue Flames smithy, Enoch.

"The White Hammer smithy has been disgraced for the last three years and it won't be able to win again this year. Are you enjoying your last bit of fun?"

Enoch was someone with a kind and comforting appearance. But his tone and words were nasty.

"Your father would be sad. The White Hammer smithy will soon be destroyed because a blacksmith who can't handle fire was made the successor."

" ... "

Enoch talked about White's dead father. White was furious. But he tried to be patient and not show his anger. In the end, Enoch's words weren't wrong. If he became angry

now, wouldn't that make Enoch laugh even more?

'I feel sorry for my father.'

White was guilty of being a bad son.

Kkuok!

Blood flowed as White formed a tight fist.

"A blacksmith should cherish his hands."

Grid stepped forward from where he had been watching the situation. He took out a bandage he used when he was a beginning and handed it to White, before speaking to Enoch.

"Are you good at handling fire?"

Enoch thought it was ridiculous.

"What's this? I've never seen you before? A newbie like you dares to interrupt a conversation between adults? Is this your concept?"

"What adult? There's only a 10 year difference between us."

"Hah, the level of the White Hammer smithy is really low. I don't like this type of rudeness. Tsk tsk, really. All the talented people are gathering in my smithy. Well, this year's winner is obvious. Let's celebrate in advance. Puhahat."

'What a funny guy.'

Going to another waiting room just to argue? A complete gangster. Grid disliked this type of person.

"I'll have to beat you first."

A woodcutter made an absurd remark about beating the master of the Blue Flames smithy. White didn't hear it. He was trying to swallow his anger.

Chapter 531

“Leader...”

The White Hammer blacksmiths called out, but White didn't respond. He sat to one side with his head bowed. He was trembling with shame after Enoch laughed at him. The White Hammer blacksmiths were worried. The ashamed White turned away from them. Grid approached White with a frown.

“Is there time to be doing this?”

“...?”

“If you're upset, pay it back. There's no time to be absentminded. Do your best with your skills.”

Grid had contempt for bullies. It was because he had once been ignored and despised by people. That's how he could sympathize with White's heart. Blacksmith's Affection also added to the feeling of wanting to help White.

“If you don't like that feeling in your chest, blow it away. Then I'll get right to the point. Pull it out. The design of the Red Phoenix that you envisioned.”

“Huh? U-Understood.”

White wanted Grid's help with the bellows. It was his only task. There was no need for him to see the design. In addition, this design was made by the White Hammer blacksmiths and it was something that shouldn't be shown to just anyone. But White was in a daze and easily handed over the design to Grid.

[The Red Phoenix Bow (Reproduction: White Hammer Version) design has been acquired.]

[Red Phoenix Bow (Reproduction: White Hammer Version)]

Rating: Normal ~ Epic

Normal Rating Information:

...

...

Rare Rating Information:

...

...

Epic Rating Information:

...

...

It was 1m 20cm in size. It is slightly larger than a short bow and much smaller than a longbow. The bow was divided into three big pieces. In the center, Hwangpyeong Mountain bamboo was used as a material, while both sides had mulberry wood. Grid checked the design and accompanying explanatory text before asking White.

"What are the characteristics of the Hwangpyeong Mountain bamboo and mulberry wood?"

"Hwangpyeong Mountain bamboo is specially selected because it contains a lot of fiber, while the mulberry wood is both soft and strong."

"In other words, the bow is made from materials that maximize elasticity?"

"Huh? Oh, that's right. It doesn't break easily and can fire the arrows."

Shouldn't a woodcutter know all this? As White was feeling confused, Grid started to scan the materials.

‘Certainly, both the bamboo and mulberry wood are of the best quality.’

It wasn’t comparable to the bamboo and mulberry on the West Continent. The trees on the East Continent was much better in quality.

‘Is it because they grow in an environment filled with mana?’

Good. Obviously good.

‘But...’

Based on the name, the Red Phoenix Bow had the fire attribute. No matter how outstanding the performance, it was questionable if the bamboo and mulberry wood could sustain the heat of the flames. Grid identified the next dubious part of the design.

...

The exterior of the bow was wrapped with a fireproof leather.

“What is that red leather?”

"It doesn’t burn even when covered in flames. It’s Rascal Leather. It’s very solid and durable against fire.”

“...Hmmm.”

Now he understood. But the most important thing was the creation of flames. What did the White Hammer smithy think about to summon fire? Grid was filled with anticipation as he confirmed the final part of the drawing, only to deflate. He discovered that they used a fire stone.

"What are you doing?”

Why was the design that White made with all his heart being crumpled? White looked at Grid with a disbelieving expression. Grid realized his mistake and muttered as he unfolded the pattern again.

“This won’t do.”

Fire stone? It might be a rare ore, but it could be found on the West Continent. Grid

was convinced since it was a production material he used quite often.

‘It might be possible with an iron bow or a composite bow, but a simple wood bow won’t be able to bear the weight of the fire stone. The balance would be off. If the weight of the fire stone is lowered, the firepower will weaken.’

If a bow was made in accordance with this design, it wouldn’t be qualified to be called the Red Phoenix Bow.

‘Indeed, the answer is to use the white phosphorus wood. It’s certain.’

The problem was that he didn’t know the shape and characteristics of the Red Phoenix Bow, but White could help with that.

"White, you’ve seen the Red Phoenix Bow, right?"

"Of course. It’s the treasure of my hometown, so I have seen it many times from a distance. The lord holds the Red Phoenix Bow for big events."

Liking faded from White’s eyes when looking at Grid. He didn’t appreciate his design being crumpled and his affinity fell. But Grid didn’t care. There were plenty of chances to make up for his mistake!

"Is this design based on the Red Phoenix Bow that you saw?"

"Yes... However, the Red Phoenix Bow wasn’t covered with leather. It was made entirely of wood... This is the result of trying to copy the form as much as possible."

"Was the color of the Red Phoenix Bow white?"

"Huh, how did you know...? That’s right. The Red Phoenix Bow was white..."

It was up to here. Grid no longer hesitated and immediately took action.

"Item Creation."

[What item do you want to create?]

“A bow.”

[What materials would you like to use?]

“White pho..... No, wait.”

The white phosphorus wood was comparable to dragon iron. It was harder than steel and had weak elasticity. Thus, Grid was somewhat hesitant. White’s design was based on the Red Phoenix Bow that he saw and it had the shape of a bow that emphasized resilience. If the Red Phoenix Bow emphasized resilience like White interpreted, then white phosphorus wood shouldn’t be the main material used.

‘But what if White misinterpreted?’

Then the story was different. Grid believed in his own intuition. It wasn’t arrogance. It was the pride he had as a legendary blacksmith.

“I will use the white phosphorus wood as a material.”

Grid made his decision.



"What is he doing?"

"Let’s see?"

The White Hammer blacksmiths were confused. The woodcutter Grid was suddenly asking about the Red Phoenix Bow. After a while, he squatted in the corner and started drawing something. One blacksmith cried out with surprise.

“Don’t tell me! He’s copying the design of the Red Phoenix Bow that we spend three years and countless trials and errors completing?”

"Haha, how silly."

"It's nonsense."

Grid couldn't be a design thief. Surely a thief wouldn't blatantly copy in front of the parties involved?

"He would deliberately go to a place that is dark... Heok?"

Was he really a thief trying to steal it? The blacksmiths became alert. White restrained those who were feeling hostile towards Grid.

"You shouldn't judge a person so casually."

Yes, just like White a few days ago. Didn't he see only a few pieces of Grid and judged from that? White thought Grid was an unscrupulous person dreaming about becoming a blacksmith without even knowing the job.

'I didn't know he was such a distinguished person. Hrmm... '

But now he was different. What was Grid doing while squatting down? Maybe Grid was actually taking part of their design as his fellow blacksmiths said?

'No, he wouldn't steal so openly... Hrmm.'

White was worried. White was reminded of the darkness that lived in people and approached Grid. He looked at what Grid was drawing in the air and became shocked. He was amazed enough to jump like a rabbit. The picture Grid was drawing. It was the Red Phoenix Bow. It was a much more complete design than the Red Phoenix Bow that White had envisioned for the last three years.

"N-No, how can this be...? How can a woodcutter do such a thing?"

White still misunderstood Grid as a woodcutter. Grid laughed as he confirmed the information of the completed design.

[Red Phoenix (Reproduction)]

Rating: Epic ~ Legendary

Epic Rating Information:

...

...

Unique Rating Information:

...

...

Legendary Rating Information:

...

...

The treasure of Pangea that was reproduced by a legendary blacksmith. Its value can compete with the original.

‘Okay.’

Now the key depending on the rating of the Red Phoenix Bow produced during the competition. Grid asked the baffled White a question.

"Did you say the competition time was eight hours?"

White replied with a dazed expression.

“Ah... Yes, that’s correct. It’s too long to make a bow, but this is the competition to reproduce Pangea’s treasure...”

‘This is rotten.’

The time was too short. For Grid who spent a day or two making a bow, eight hours

was nothing.

‘I have to use it wisely.’

There was also the new power he obtained from making the 20th legendary item.

‘Item Upgrade!’

Grid was convinced that he could easily clear the quest with this power, even if he couldn’t perfectly reproduce the Red Phoenix Bow. He checked the time and rose.

"Then let’s depart."



“The White Hammer blacksmiths are entering!”

“Boo! Boooooo!”

The White Hammer blacksmiths entered the stadium with Grid in the front, not White. The spectators booed loudly since they lost the last three competitions. White and the blacksmiths shrank back, while Grid enjoyed it.

‘More.’

Ignore him more.

‘The more you ignore us, the more dramatic the result will be.’

Grid grinned widely, revealing his teeth. The blacksmiths of the other smithies on the stage ridiculed him.

“Who is that person?”

“It is the first time I’ve seen him... Isn’t he new?”

"Why is a new person leading instead of White?"

"White might be embarrassed and is using the new person as a shield."

"He's pathetic to the end."

The tens of thousands of spectators and the hundreds of blacksmiths. They had no idea that this newbie would cause a huge commotion. It was the first step of Grid's legend on the East Continent.

Chapter 532

“U-Um...”

White and the White Hammer blacksmiths found it hard to understand the current situation. Why was a woodcutter asked to control the flames in front of all of them?

‘I want to tell him to stand back, but...’

‘He’s the great person who designed the Red Phoenix Bow!’

‘Who the hell is he?’

‘Maybe it’s as Leader White said...’

‘He might be a distinguished person...’

‘He’s someone who cut down the white phosphorus tree.’

The White Hammer blacksmiths murmured among themselves while climbing onto the stage.

"Bhhhhh-! Boooooo!"

"White is a coward! All the other blacksmiths are standing at the forefront. Why do you have a newcomer in front of you?"

"Isn't it shameful to hide behind another person?"

The crowd's booing became stronger. The leader of the Blue Flames smithy, Enoch, walked over to White.

“You dare to participate in the competition again? In any case, the result will be the same as the last three years. Isn't that right? For. Ever. Lo. Ser. Friend.

" ... "

White didn't respond to Enoch. Enoch was someone who liked ridiculing others and seeing their reactions. He would go away if White ignored him. But Enoch was persistent.

"I really can't understand you. Daring to risk the White Hammer smithy's reputation by confronting me when you don't have the talent. Ah, no. Didn't the reputation of the White Hammer smithy already fall to the bottom after your father died? It was the day he foolishly died to the armored needle."

"You!"

"Kukuk! It turns out to be like father, like son!"

Enoch was crossing the line. White could no longer tolerate it. The moment he became angry enough to punch Enoch in the face, something interrupted him.

"Bark bark. Bark. It's the sound of a dog barking nonsense."

"...?"

Enoch was watching White with pleasure, when he became shocked. The two people simultaneously turned their gazes in the direction of the barking. They discovered a black-haired man with sharp eyes. It was the unidentified newcomer of the White Hammer smithy.

Grid scoffed and said to Enoch. "You're a crazy dog. Just wait a minute. There's no need to bother Teacher White. I will smash you myself."

"Teacher White?"

White and Enoch were both surprised. White was stunned while Enoch laughed loudly. This was a jackpot.

"You're really crazy! White! You don't know the topic and actually dare to be a teacher? A person with poor talent teaching someone else? Puhat! Puhahat! Oh, my stomach! If the other blacksmiths hear this, they would be laughing!"

"Ugh...!"

White's face turned red. His skin was dark, making it hard to see, but he didn't look

good. White was really embarrassed. It was because there was nothing wrong with Enoch's words.

"..."

He had spent the past three years as a loser. White lost his self-esteem and couldn't help bowing his head.

"Raise your head. Don't get used to seeing the ground." Grid stared at White and was reminded of his past self. "Today, the White Hammer smithy that you and your father love will win the competition."

Suuk.

Grid's finger pointed at White's heart. White saw the hard calluses on the thick fingers.

'Blacksmith hands?'

White belatedly realized Grid's real identity. He felt astonished as Grid confirmed it.

"You will be the best smithy in Pangea."

Today's victory would be achieved by relying on Grid, but not in the future. White was a person he used Blacksmith's Affection on. His blacksmith skill level was destined to rise the moment that his affinity reached the maximum.



"Enoch is becoming more and more distorted."

"It was because he respected Dawwhite more than anyone else. He was disappointed when Dawwhite chose White as a successor, despite not being able to support the smithy."

"Looking at it, the poor person isn't White, but Enoch. Well, that doesn't excuse his twisted personality."

"Ignore him. Enoch and White aren't people we have to worry about."

Enoch had excellent skills and a twisted personality, while White was born with a

unique talent, but was lazy in his youth. From the perspective of the skilled and older leaders of the Black Anvil and Red Tongs smithies, they were both inexperienced.

“Hmmm, yes. We have to focus on the competition.”

“Last year, I was careless and lost the title to Enoch.”

“This year will be our second victory.”

The Black Anvil and Red Tongs leaders acknowledged each other as opponents. The appearance of the best blacksmiths in Pangea excited the audience.

“Beoksan! La Hochul! Have a great match this year!”

“Make the national treasure! Fighting!”

“The firepower of last year’s Red Phoenix Bow was too weak! This year, make it heat of the fire properly!”

Waaahhhhhhhh!

It was a really different atmosphere. The White Hammer smithy was booed and received criticisms, while the Black Anvil and Red Tongs smithies received cheers. White was used to it, but he still felt sick. White bowed to Grid.

“First of all, I’m ashamed and sorry for being unable to recognize you as a blacksmith. And thank you very much. You helped stop me from doing something I would regret.”

“There’s no need to thank me...”

Grid attempted to demonstrate humility, only to suddenly stop. This was the East Continent, not the West Continent. In this place, he was an ordinary person, not a noble or the leader of Overgeared. There was no need to consider his social status. He could act according to his personality. Grid changed what he was going to say.

“Yes, you should feel deep appreciation.”

Huhuhut!

White couldn’t help questioning Grid, “Why? Why are you helping me?”

Grid's answer was simple.

"Of course, it's for me. I have to stay here in Pangea for the moment. It will be helpful if I can obtain someone's grace."

"...Why did you choose me?"

"..."

Grid was embarrassed. Why did Grid come to the White Hammer smithy and help White? There was no reason. He ran into White because the White Hammer smithy was the closest. Then he received the quest and the situation became like this. But White was full of expectations. He was criticized after losing his father, only for Grid to suddenly appear. He wanted to be special for Grid. Until now, he had lived a poor life. But was he actually qualified to be the protagonist of his life? Didn't the sky drop Grid in front of him?

Grid looked at White's eyes that were shining like lanterns and smiled. It was a smile filled with genuine affection, not falsehood.

"You are special."

What if someone like the current Grid had appeared before his past self? That's right. Grid projected his past self onto White.

"Only you are entitled to receive help from me. So I looked for you."

"Only... Me..."

White's heart started to beat faster. This was an unidentified blacksmith who completed the design of the Red Phoenix Bow in a short amount of time. A special existence that couldn't be measured. Thus, his self-esteem started to rise again. But there was one part that weighed on his mind.

Even if the White Hammer smithy won this competition, it wouldn't be through their skills. White was grateful for the help, but it was meaningless to win through the hands of another person.

'What if I'm not qualified after winning the competition?'

He would lose even the glory of the past that he wasn't qualified for.

"Thank you... I really appreciate it. But... I think it would be better not to receive your help in this competition."

Grid grinned at the struggling White and shook his head.

"Don't think about complicated things and just accept. Didn't I say it? You are special. After the competition, you will be qualified to be the winner."



The amount of times it was possible to use the Legendary Blacksmith's Creation increased by three every time the skill level of the Legendary Blacksmith's Craftsmanship skill increased. Most skills were mastered at level 10. Therefore, it meant the total number of times Grid could create an item was 30 in total.

Grid needed to use the Legendary Blacksmith's Creation skill cautiously. It was clear that if Grid used it carelessly even once, he would regret it for the rest of his life. In other words, Grid used the creation skill on the Red Phoenix Bow after careful consideration.

'I definitely think it's worth it.'

Grid lined up with the White Hammer blacksmiths and listened to the host announce the start of the competition. It was the ultimate joy to see a completed Red Phoenix Bow.

'This is a bow for Jishuka.'

If he could arm thousands of soldiers with it in the future...

'I will be invincible.'

Grid looked at the completed Red Phoenix Bow design and pulled out something from his inventory. White wood. The white phosphorus wood.

"What?"

The tens of thousands of spectators and hundreds of blacksmiths all felt doubt.

“G-Grid.”

Grid quickly attracted the attention of many people. White couldn't help feeling nervous. However, Grid attracted the attention of countless people since becoming Pagma's Descendant and was used to it. He didn't feel nervous at all.

“Now, I shall begin.”

Chapter 533

There was a clear similarity between the Red Phoenix Bow that Grid imagined and the one that the White Hammer blacksmiths designed. The bow was white and created powerful flames. It was the decisive moment when Grid was convinced that the main material of the Red Phoenix Bow was the white phosphorus wood.

The white phosphorus wood was hard and comparable to dragon iron. However, it was also lightweight and generated its own powerful flames. It was suitable to use as a material for the Red Phoenix Bow. However, the other blacksmiths of Pangea never thought about using the white phosphorus wood. Very few people expected the material of the Red Phoenix Bow to be white phosphorus wood.

Were they stupid? No. It was just common sense. The white phosphorus tree was something that could never be cut down by a blacksmith. No, it was common sense everywhere in the world. No one would think of making something with the white phosphorus wood.

But Grid did it. He was the only person in the world who could cut down the white phosphorus tree!

“Isn’t that white phosphorus wood?”

“It’s impossible...”

The tens of thousands of spectators watching the stage. All eyes were on the place that was surrounded by pine trees. It was due to the white wood that the new blacksmith from the White Hammer smithy took out. Straight white wood. It looked exactly like the white phosphorus wood. However, people judged that it couldn’t be the white phosphorus wood.

"The white phosphorus tree can't be cut down, right?"

"That's right. I heard that it will explode if cut."

“It’s impossible for it to be the white phosphorus wood. It just looks like white phosphorus wood.”

But was there a tree that resembled the white phosphorus tree in this world? There might be a lot of white trees, but the white phosphorus wood was unique. The white phosphorus wood had no twisted parts at all. As people were feeling confused, someone shouted a negative opinion.

"Those damn White Hammer guys! They can't get people's attention with their skills, so they prepared a useless performance!"

On one side of the stage. It was a cry from the Blue Flames section facing the White Hammer section. It was Enoch's voice. He was sincerely angry. He didn't like that people were paying attention to the White Hammer smithy instead of the winner of last year's competition.

The White Hammer smithy was grabbing people's attention with a performance, not skill. Pulling out fake white phosphorus wood? It was nothing more than an irritating and meaningless act. It was just embarrassing.

Dawhite. The person he once respected most in the world. Enoch had complicated emotions because the White Hammer smithy that Dawhite built had completely lost its honor and was about to fall.

'Dawhite!'

Why did he pick White as his successor, destroying the White Hammer smithy? All of Dawhite's achievements were now worthless.

'It is sad that even the greatest human is obsessed with bloodlines!'

Kwack!

Enoch placed the finest firewood that he had prepared into the furnace. He used a secret technique to cause blue flames to burn in the furnace.

"I'll show you the most ideal flames in the world!"

Hwaruruk!

Enoch pressed on the bellows and the blue flames flared up. The hot heat made the stage boil and stimulated the crowd.

“Ohh! Huge flames!”

"Indeed, the glow of the blue flames is brilliant!"

The quality of the blue flames was the best in the Cho Kingdom. Even Dawwhite acknowledged the blue flames when he was alive. The lowest grade iron ore could be refined like the finest grade iron ore. That's why these blue flames had the highest rating!

The blazing flames caught the attention of the crowd. The crowd turned away from the White Hammer smithy and the white phosphorus wood. Meanwhile, Grid was also admiring Enoch's flames.

‘He’s a blacksmith who is good at the bellows.’

It seemed like Enoch had the skills of a craftsman when it came to flames. That's right. It was just a craftsman. It was far less than a legendary blacksmith. Grid was surprised and disappointed.

‘I thought I would learn something from observing the Blue Flames smithy, just like I did from the White Hammer smithy.’

It wasn't that much.

‘The technique of the White Hammer smithy is special.’

It seemed like the Dawwhite who kept being mentioned was an excellent blacksmith. Grid thought this and threw the white phosphorus wood in the furnace.

At that moment.

Peeeeeeong!

“...!”

There was a loud explosion from the White Hammer smithy's furnace. The surprised crowd and blacksmiths turned their attention to the White Hammer area again. Then they were shocked.

"W-What? Those flames?"

"It's swallowing up the furnace?"

Flames of immense size. The flames rose from the blast furnace and leapt outside, covering the entire blast furnace. Red flames burst into the air, like the surface of the sun. Unlike the people who were astonished, Enoch burst out laughing.

"Puhahaha! A person who doesn't know how to handle the bellows! The materials can't be properly refined from such a strong fire! It will just burn everything up... Hak!"

Enoch fell silent for the first time.

Puok. Puok. Puok.

Grid.

The new White Hammer blacksmith was pumping on the handle of the bellows and repeated this movement.

Hwaruruk! Hwaruk!

The large flames in the furnace suddenly died down? Enoch and the chiefs of the Black Anvil and Red Tongs smithy all stared with wide eyes.

'The flames that I thought were impossible to control was calmed in an instant?'

'It's ridiculous the way he is handling the bellows. That young man's hands... Yes, it's like he has spent his whole life doing this.'

'Who is that person? Standing in front of the heat that could melt the skin, he doesn't shrink back and calmly handled the bellows? His skin didn't even turn red?'

Kurururung!

A loud sound was heard from the White Hammer smithy. It was the sound generated by the rise in temperature of the flames in the furnace.

"G-Great. But isn't the temperature too high? Won't you be turned into ashes before he can put the iron in?"

Grid explained to the cautious White.

“It might be dangerous, but this is a necessary process. The white phosphorus wood that is cut is merely hard. It doesn’t produce flames.”

However, the fire attribute in it was still alive. The white phosphorus wood was material that was activated when stimulated by high temperatures. This was the knowledge of a legendary blacksmith that Grid obtained from the system correct effect.

Hwaruruk!

The flames in the furnace emitted a high temperature that made it impossible to stay close to. White and the other White Hammer blacksmiths took one or two steps back, while Grid stepped forward. Then he put the prepared white phosphorus wood into the furnace and accelerated his usage of the bellows.

Puok! Puok! Puok!

The unstoppable air steadily raised the temperature of the blast furnace.

‘It’s impossible!’

The blacksmiths of the Blue Flames smithy started to deny reality. From their point of view, Grid wasn’t a human. He seemed like a great demon surrounded by the flames of hell. In particular, Enoch started to fear Grid.

“Success.”

Grid stopped the bellows and pulled the white phosphorus wood out of the furnace. The white phosphorus wood was much whiter than before. It showed off a beautiful white light. Grid grabbed it with the tongs and placed it on the anvil. Then he pulled out a hammer that only Pagma’s Descendant could use.

Peeeeeeong!

The moment that Grid’s hammer struck.

“Hat!”

The chiefs of the Black Anvil and Red Tongs smithy took a breath. Grid’s forging quality. It was better than his handling of the bellows that they saw a while ago!

'That young man...!'

'Perfect!'

He was far better than Dawwhite in his prime. It was enough to make them think about the legendary blacksmith that they'd only heard about.

Ttang! Ttang! Ttang!

Grid continued the forging. He hammered at the white phosphorus wood that was as hard as dragon iron and gradually changed its shape. A notification window popped up in front of the sweating Grid.

[The Legendary Blacksmith's Patience skill has been activated.]

[Concentration, stamina and defense will rise to the extremes for one hour.]

Usually, the effect would be very welcome. But now Grid was entering a stage where nothing mattered. He was only dedicated to making the Red Phoenix Bow. He added the minotaur horn that he used all the time when making bows for Jishuka. This added elasticity and helped bend the wood into the shape of the bow. It looked exactly like the Red Phoenix Bow design that White saw.

'In the first place, this is the most developed form of the bow.'

The bow took shape under Grid's busy fingertips.

'Okay. This is really good.'

Grid's satisfaction and confidence rose.

'In the worst case situation.'

It was no problem if the Red Phoenix Bow was completed with an epic rating. He could use Item Upgrade to make it the unique rating and safely clear the quest. There was a limited number of times he could use Item Upgrade, just like the creation skill, but

Grid judged that this quest was worth the investment.

‘I have to raise my affinity with White and Han Seokbong.’

The reason was simple. Han Seokbong would be aware of the information of the other four guardians battle gear, which was in the same category as the Red Phoenix Bow. That’s right. Grid planned to acquire the method to make all of them while he was on the East Continent. Grid judged that the value of the four guardians items would be comparable to divine items. If he could mass produce them, Grid’s army would be invincible.

Meanwhile, Enoch’s body was shaking in the distance.

“How? How does that newcomer have these skills?”

The black-haired man in front of him was better than Dawwhite. Enoch didn’t want to acknowledge Grid’s skills, but it was impossible. As a blacksmith, he felt infinite respect for Grid’s skills. It was an instinct that couldn’t be resisted. Then...

[The Red Phoenix Bow has been completed!]

7 hours, 59 minutes and 49 seconds since the start of the competition. Grid finally stopped! The pure white bow with a fluid curve was beautiful enough to capture the attention of everyone present.

“Red Phoenix... Bow!”

The lord. The lord who had been keeping an eye on Grid throughout the competition rose to his feet. He felt the energy of the Red Phoenix from the bow made by Grid.

Chapter 534

“Good!”

Grid cheered the moment that the Red Phoenix Bow was completed. He didn't care about his dignity and honestly expressed his joy.

“Asa! Yes! A jackpot!”

“...?”

He was as happy as a mating dog? White was confused. Grid had a dignified atmosphere when he was carefully making the item for eight hours. White couldn't believe the man had transformed like this.

‘Can a person change 180 degrees? Did he accidentally hurt his head while hammering?’

It was a silly question. The Grid who tried his best and the honestly happy Grid were all the true Grid. Grid was happy because the result was good. The result of making the item!

[A legendary rated item was produced, so all stats have permanently risen by +10 and reputation throughout the continent has risen by +500.]

[There is a beneficial effect from producing the highest quality. The good luck stat has increased by 5.]

It was the moment when another legendary item was made, following the white phosphorus axe. Grid had never experienced such good luck. He looked at the 31 points in the good luck stat and his eyes reddened.

‘I once again overcame my bad luck!’

To be honest, the process of eating Idan's food was very rough and the God's Command passive didn't work well, so Grid had been having a hard time. But then he obtained the golden walnuts for free and made legendary items, balancing out the bad luck with good luck. It felt like the work he was doing was getting better and better.

'Is it thanks to the good luck stat?'

There was no other explanation. Grid was thrilled by his good luck when the notification window updated.

[The completed item's rating is too high. Item Upgrade isn't applicable.]

Item Upgrade. It was the new skill Grid got from making the 20th legendary item. There were many constraints, but it was a powerful insurance for Grid.

[Item Upgrade]

- * You can increase the rating of your own item by one step.
- * Can't be used for items that are older than 5 minutes.
- * An item can only be upgraded once.
- * The amount of times it was possible to use Item Upgrade increases by three every time the skill level of the Legendary Blacksmith's Craftsmanship skill increases.

Number of available uses: 24/24

"Hmmm."

In any case, it was very regrettable that this skill could only be used on items less than 5 minutes old.

‘It would be a huge bonus if I could use it on an existing item.’

What if he could use it to raise the level of the God Hands? As soon as the rating of the God Hands changed to a legendary rating, Grid’s attack power would skyrocket.

‘Should I melt them and recreate them?’

He could melt the God Hands to extract the ingredients and recreate it. The God Hands had a chance to be made into a legendary rating. Even if it was finished with a unique rating, he could use Item Upgrade to get a legendary rating. But it wasn’t easy to try again.

‘In any case, the God Hands are a growth-type item.’

He shouldn’t be too nervous. It was much more prudent to raise them like he was currently doing. There was a limit to the number of times Item Upgrade could be used, so he might regret it in the future.

‘Then...’

Grid was filled with disappointment at something else.

‘It’s impossible to upgrade a legendary item to a higher rating.’

The Red Phoenix Bow was finished with a legendary rating. Grid had hoped he could upgrade the Red Phoenix Bow to a myth rating. However, Item Upgrade was limited to a legendary rating.

‘No, maybe it isn’t the skill, but a limit of the Red Phoenix Bow.’

Grid couldn’t rule out the possibility that the Red Phoenix Bow itself wasn’t qualified to be upgraded to a myth rating.

‘I thought the four guardians battle gear would be on the same level as the Rebecca Church’s divine artifacts, but it might be lower.’

Grid was locked in his thoughts.

“Waaaaaaaah!”

Then the crowd cheered as the host announced the end of the competition. Finally, the details of the Red Phoenix Bow was confirmed.

[Red Phoenix Bow (Reproduction)]

Rating: Legendary

Durability: 901/901 Attack Power: 2,360

- * 60% increase in firing speed.
- * Accuracy will increase by 20%.
- * Contains penetrative damage that ignores the defense of the target's armor.
- * Every time an arrow is shot or every time the bow is raised, flames will be generated. The flames will deal a fixed 4,000 damage to the enemy and cause a 'burned' state.
- * The skill 'Fly Up!' will be generated.

The Red Phoenix Bow interpreted by the legendary blacksmith Grid, whose techniques are blossoming.

It is made of the sturdy white phosphorus tree, but the addition of the minotaur horn and tendons has added elasticity. It can shoot further, stronger, and faster, and also has a strong fire power. It has the ideal shape of a bow, so the performance is far superior to the original Red Phoenix Bow.

However, the disadvantage is that it is very difficult to use. In addition, because the power of the Red Phoenix guardian is excluded, the overall ability is lower than the original Red Phoenix Bow.

- * This is a bow worthy of the power of the Red Phoenix guardian.

Conditions of Use: Master level Advanced Bow Mastery

Weight: 1,200

“Wow.”

Typical ranged weapons and large weapons tended to rely on random damage. Unlike a one-handed sword with excellent stability, the attack power was applied as ???~???. The maximum attack power was high while the minimum attack power was low. It was possible to deal a huge amount of damage to the enemy if they were lucky. However, if they were unlucky, then less damage would be dealt.

This wasn't a good system for someone with bad luck like Grid. Ordinary people tended to recognize the concept of random damage as drawing out the potential of ranged and large weapons, but Grid was afraid of it. Even so, he kept the greatsword as his main weapon.

But the damage of the Red Phoenix Bow was fixed like a one-handed sword. It was even higher! This bow was rare.

‘In addition to that, there's compensation for high speed and high accuracy rate.’

The arrows shot also had a powerful fire damage. The Red Phoenix Bow contained all the things that Grid thought was ideal for a perfect weapon.

‘More than anything else.’

It was much better than the original Red Phoenix Bow. It was a bow that desired the power of the Red Phoenix guardian. If Grid's Red Phoenix Bow was given the power of the Red Phoenix, it would boast a power that far transcended the original.

‘This means the original four guardians battle gear is equivalent to the Rebecca Church's divine artifacts.’

The Red Phoenix Bow was a legendary rating even before the power of the Red Phoenix. The Red Phoenix Bow might grow to the myth rating if it received the energy of the Red Phoenix.

‘But how do I get the energy of the Red Phoenix?’

Grid tilted his head to one side and grinned. He realized there was no need to worry about it.

“Red Phoenix...! Red Phoenix... Bow!”

A man jumped onto the stage. The lord of Pangea, Han Seokbong. He ignored all the bows made by the blacksmiths of the Blue Flames, Black Anvil, and Red Tongs smithy. He headed straight towards Grid.

"You are... No, who are you?"

There was a strong liking in Han Seokbong's eyes as he looked at Grid. The quest was cleared. In other words, Grid was convinced he won the competition and answered politely.

“A blacksmith passing by. I stopped by here in Pangea and was impressed by White. I decided to help him for a moment.”

Grid thought carefully about how to answer to increase affinity with both Han Seokbong and White. The effect was big.

“Ohh...! White's skills brought such a distinguished person to Pangea!”

“Grid!”

The moment that Han Seokbong and White were feeling overjoyed.

“I can't admit it!” Enoch, who was proud after building up a big friendship with Han Seokbong after winning last year's competition, refused it. "Strictly speaking, this person isn't a blacksmith of the White Hammer smithy! Therefore, this competition should be void!”

Enoch protested to the end. Grid and White bristled but there was no need to worry.

"My only desire was the restoration of the Red Phoenix Bow, and he has achieved it! In addition, this result was possible due to White's skills and virtue. There's no denying that the White Hammer smithy won!”

Lord Han Seokbong directly defended the White Hammer smithy. Enoch was forced to close his mouth while Grid and White sighed with relief. At the same time.

[The quest 'Win the Smithy Competition!' has been completed.]

[The affinity with White, the master of the White Hammer smithy, has reached the maximum! White will never cause you any trouble!]

[In the future, all items at the White Hammer smithy are available for purchase at cost price!]

[If you sell items at the White Hammer smithy, you can sell them at 20% higher than the market price!]

[All facilities in the White Hammer smithy will be freely available!]

[Due to the effect of the Blacksmith's Affection skill, White's blacksmithing skill level has risen by 3!]

[White's blacksmithing skill has reached advanced level 8.]

[The affinity with Pangea's lord, Han Seokbong, has increased by 80! Unless you make a big mistake, Han Seokbong will infinitely favor you!]

[You have gained access to Pangea Castle's dungeon!]

[Your level has risen.]

[Follow Han Seokbong. You can get a reward.]

"Can I ask for the name of this distinguished person?"

If Han Seokbong couldn't restore the lost Red Phoenix Bow, both him and the Cho Kingdom would've been in danger. Han Seokbong recognized Grid as the benefactor of the kingdom and Grid needed to maintain a good relationship with him, so Grid answered politely.

"Grid."

"Grid..."

At this moment. A great name spread throughout the Cho Kingdom. Han Seokbong repeated Grid's name several times before saying,

"Well, let's go to my castle first. Ah, please hand over the Red Phoenix Bow."

"?????"

Curses almost emerged from his mouth. Grid felt like he had been hit in the back of his head.

Chapter 535

‘This is... Isn’t it outrageous?’

This was the Red Phoenix Bow that he made using his best effort. The Legendary Blacksmith’s Creation skill was used, and it contained the essence of Grid’s effort and skill...

‘I have to give it away?’

Grid doubted his ears and Han Seokbong demanded again.

“The restored Red Phoenix Bow will allow me to manage Pangea for the rest of my life. Now, please.”

"No, this is... Ah!"

Grid’s face turned red as he suddenly realized. Restoration! The word meant to recover something. The Red Phoenix Bow was the national treasure and Pangea wanted to restore it because it was lost.

‘Han Seokbong wants the restored Red Phoenix Bow... ’

It was natural. He wanted the Red Phoenix Bow returned to its original place! Oh, why didn’t Grid think about this earlier?

‘How rotten... ’

Flop!

Grid grumbled and pulled his hair. He felt wronged. Was it the quest itself? No, he had no such complaints about the quest. This was a quest to become friendly with the lord and acquire access to the castle’s dungeon. It was a quest he would’ve accepted, even if he knew that he had to give up on the Red Phoenix Bow.

In the first place, the white phosphorus bow that was used for the Red Phoenix Bow was readily available. It wasn’t too much if he gave the Red Phoenix Bow to another.

‘At least, if it was the epic or unique rating!’

Then why?

‘Why did a legendary rating appear in this type of quest?’

In retrospect, this was also the case with the National Competition. He created a growth type item and it was taken away. Grid couldn’t help feeling like it was unfair.

‘Creating a good item, just to hand it to someone else...’

He had been proud like an idiot the moment that the legendary item was created.

"My damn luck..."

He was too unlucky. It was undeniable bad luck!

“Now, let's go.”

Grid was sighing by himself. Han Seokbong personally raised him up. He brought White and Grid and headed to the lord’s castle.

Waaahhhhhhhh!

Their great lord was holding the hand of a blacksmith? The excited crowd cheered excitedly at the unusual sight.

“He didn’t even treat me, last year’s winner, like this...”

Blue Flame's leader, Enoch, was frustrated. White, who he had ignored so much, had transcended himself in one morning.



Pangea Castle.

“Hah.”

On the way to the castle. Grid inwardly complained for an hour and finally shut his mouth. He was captivated by the beauty of Pangea Castle. Pangea Castle reminded him

of the castle from the Goryeo period that he saw in the historical dramas.

‘However, it’s much bigger and more colorful.’

He walked along the marble floor and crossed seven doors. Finally, he arrived at the innermost part of the castle. It was the most secret and important part of the castle where the lord and his family lived. White gulped. He clearly felt nervous. He was different from Grid. As an ordinary blacksmith, White never expected to be invited to the innermost palace.

"That... Lord. I don't think this is a place for a lowly blacksmith like me to step into."

It was Grid, not Han Seokbong, who responded to White.

"Why are you a lowly blacksmith?"

“Haha! He’s right! Blacksmiths are the base of national power! Furthermore, White is the best blacksmith in Pangea! It’s only when you treat yourself like dirt that the kingdom will be shaken!”

"..."

White felt like it was a dream. The person who had been ignored and despised by people just this morning was now recognized by the esteemed lord of this kingdom. The cheers of the people at the venue were still roaring in his ears.

'My life changed in a moment... '

All of this.

‘It’s thanks to Grid!’

White’s eyes shone as he gazed at Grid. It resembled Noe’s eyes when he was hungry. Grid felt burdened.

‘The love of all these uncles... ’

It had been like this since the past. Grid was only loved by uncle or grandfather type NPCs. A prime example was Khan. Grid was a young man in his prime. He wanted to be loved by women more than men.

'I heard there are a lot of female NPC blacksmiths.'

Why did he only have blacksmiths that were old men around him? Even the only elf he met was a male.

"It can't be..."

Was this the aftermath of his bad luck? It gave him goosebumps. Grid's shoulders sank as he felt depressed.

Han Seokbong led him to one side of the innermost palace. It was a small room with calligraphy written on the wall.

"Wow, there are others in the world who can write as well as me."

Grid couldn't help admiring it. Han Seokbong coughed and removed the 'rules' stuck on the wall with a blush. No, it wasn't 'rules' but the character for 'fire.' There was a small button hidden in the spot covered by it and once Han Seokbong pressed it, the flat wall split to the left and right. Then a stairway leading to the basement was revealed.

"Now, let's go."

Grid and the frightened White gazed at the dismal looking entrance. Han Seokbong smile benevolently and led them down the stairs.

After a while.

"A place like this is in the basement of the castle..."

It was an underground space illuminated by brilliant jade monuments. It was a small space that gave a warm feeling. The blue moss on the wall shone brilliantly.

"It's too small to be a dungeon... What is this place?"

Han Seokbong answered Grid's question as he pulled out the Red Phoenix Bow. He stared to explain as he placed the Red Phoenix Bow on the altar present.

"This place has good feng shui..."

Omitted.

'Waterway? What five elements? What is he saying?'

It was a long description that Grid couldn't understand. Grid was feeling confused and all of Han Seokbong's words entered one ear and out the other.

"In other words, this is the space where Grid's great work will stay forever."

"Ah... Yes."

One thing was clear. His legendary Red Phoenix Bow. He would never be able to get it back in his lifetime.

'It isn't hard to create a new Red Phoenix Bow because of all the white phosphorus trees on the East Continent, but... '

Could he create a legendary rated Red Phoenix Bow again? He had no confidence.

"Ah?" Grid trembled and suddenly doubted something. "But Seokbong... No, Lord Seokbong. You must know that I have only restored the active function of the Red Phoenix Bow, not the aura of the Red Phoenix. Is this really the Red Phoenix Bow? Isn't it useless?"

Grid was unable to let go of the Red Phoenix Bow. He wanted it back. But Han Seokbong misunderstood.

"Distinguished person... You are truly a brilliant person."

"Huh?"

"I am truly grateful that you restored the Red Phoenix Bow, but you are concerned that you didn't help me enough?"

"...?"

Grid was embarrassed by Han Seokbong's interpretation.

"You are virtuous enough to be compared to the most respectable king of the Cho Kingdom. I feel admiration just looking at you. If it isn't impolite, I would like to

present a title to you.”

‘A title!’

Titles in Satisfy had a mysterious power. They raised certain stats, gave new skills, or new power. The more titles a person had, the better. There was no reason for Grid to refuse.

“Give it to me! A title!”

Han Seokbong nodded at Grid’s joyful shout. "You are a gentleman of virtue. In commemoration of Pangea, I will call you Pangea’s Duke of Virtue.”

"Pangea’s Duke... of Virtue.”

He had a very bad feeling. Braham’s voice rang in the mind of the disappointed Grid.

'Just as some of the direct vampires have the title of the wise duke, human beings also have the title of ‘duke.’ Sword Saint Muller had the title of ‘Duke of Pressure’ and Blacksmith Pagma had the title of ‘Duke of Fire.’ The title of a duke is a symbol of legends and gives great power to legends. In fact, after getting the title of Duke of Fire, Pagma was able to bring out flames with his hammering and swordsmanship.’

“Oh...”

Grid’s disappointment disappeared. He was filled with new anticipation as he asked Braham.

'Then what ability will I get as a virtuous person?’

At the same time.

[The title Pangea’s Duke of Virtue has been acquired!]

[The passive skill ‘Incomplete Virtue of Mercy’ has been created!]

[Incomplete Virtue of Mercy]

Category: Passive

When hunting monsters, there is a chance that you will show mercy and not take their lives.

“Ah, XX.”

In the end. Grid couldn’t resist inwardly cursing. Braham consoled him.

‘Don’t be an idiot. A duke title wouldn’t be terrible. Don’t be too concerned. The original duke titles aren’t for a single person, but lots of people. You might get new titles later. Well, even if you have a lousy title for the rest of your life, it won’t be a big problem if I take care of you.’

"Ah, I don’t know. If this keeps happening I might fold the game.”

At this time, Grid couldn’t imagine. The power of the virtuous title!



S.A. Group’s headquarters. Lim Cheolho was doing his work when he heard a report from the supercomputer Morpheus.

[A duke title was acquired.]

“What?”

Lim Cheolho was startled. A duke title was a symbolic power that could only be given to players who succeeded a legend or would grow to be a legend. It was very difficult to get because it was very powerful. The person had to build up myriad achievements and gain full recognition from the residents of Satisfy.

"Morpheus? Didn’t you say that these titles would only emerge in 1 year and 8 months?”

[It is one of the 5 miracle players. Grid once again broke my predictions.]

“Grid...! Haha! This time as well?”

Lim Cheolho had a great liking for Grid. A poor person grew steadily in the game that he made, so he felt happy watching Grid. Lim Cheolho asked with expectations.

“What new idea did he have to break your prediction this time?”

[It wasn't a new idea. As always, he gave off a great impression by respecting and saving NPCs. Once this repetitive action reached the 79th time, the title was opened.]

“Um... That's Grid's specialty.”

Grid was an expert at gaining the favor of NPCs. It wasn't always intended and sometimes it was caused by a misunderstanding. Lim Cheolho and Morpheus obviously didn't know that.

"Then what title did he obtain?"

[Pangea's Duke of Virtue.]

"Pangea's... Duke of Virtue?"

The distinguishing word (Pangea) in front of it meant that Grid hadn't yet become purely virtuous. Well, it was no wonder. It was too early for a perfect title to emerge. Lim Cheolho was embarrassed that the title Grid obtained was Duke of Virtue.

“Virtue... It doesn't really fit with a blacksmith?”

It was a title designed to match the legends of other fields.

"No, why didn't he get the Duke of Fire... Oh my, this is going to cause another uproar.”

He could see that Grid was going insane. Lim Cheolho clicked his tongue.

“Why did you have to treat NPCs so well every time...?”

This was the result of Grid's good heart. Lim Cheolho felt both sorry and delighted for Grid.

Chapter 536

Pangea's Duke of Virtue.

'If someone doesn't know about the title, they would think that's Pan Deokin!' (In Korean: it is three characters, like a Korean name.)

It wasn't a problem to be misunderstood. The name Pan Deokin fit Grid's taste. It wasn't bad or good. The problem was the effect of the title.

'There is a chance to spare monsters when hunting?'

Then what about the experience? The money? The items!

'In particular, what if I'm hunting a boss?'

What if he poured dozens of minutes or a few hours into the raid and the moment he was about to succeed...

[The effect of the title Pangea's Duke of Virtue has been activated!]

What if that notification window appeared?

"Ugh..."

He felt horrible just imagining it. His stomach was cramping. That's right. Grid accepted the effect of the Pangea's Person of Virtue title at face value. He didn't guess things like saving a monster would build up a favorable relationship with it or perhaps give him a tamer class skill. It was natural from Grid's position.

Why? Grid was already an all-rounder. He was a blacksmith, swordsman, magician, and skeleton summoner. It was hard to imagine that he would get a new class from this. He didn't want it in the first place.

“Ah, shi...”

He handed over the Red Phoenix Bow and got an affinity score of 80. He was expecting a reward other than this garbage! Grid was feeling frustration from the title when Han Seokbong handed him a bead. It was a red bead. Yes, it was a beautiful red bead like Braham’s eyes. At first, Grid thought it was a round ruby, but then he made a sound of surprise.

"Flames?"

The translucent red bead. A small flame was burning inside it. It was a small size, like the flames of a match, but the momentum from it seemed great. It was as if life was burning inside it. Grid examined it and asked, “A torch?”

“...”

A player in this place would appreciate Grid’s impression. But NPCs didn’t know what a torch was.

“What is a torch?”

White and Han Seokbong cocked their heads. Grid ignored the question.

“Then this torch... No, what is this bead?”

"The fire in the bead..."

White thought of a name when he saw that beautiful bead.

‘It’s like the picture...’

Then Han Seokbong explained.

“It’s the Red Phoenix’s Breath.”

“Breath?”

"Yes, it is the breath that drops when the four divine guardians pass by to bless those who ascend to become a daoist immortal."

'Divine guardians... Daoist immortal.'

It was a key setting for the East Continent. The Hwan Kingdom, national treasures, yangban, divine guardians. It was clearly greatly influenced by Korean and Chinese culture.

'Then there will definitely be areas influenced by Japanese culture.'

Peak Sword would surely be angry if he was there. He would probably question while the Korean S.A. Group was spreading other cultures around the world.

Grid smiled as he thought about the friend he hadn't seen for a while. A notification window appeared in Grid's field of view.

[You have obtained the 'Red Phoenix Breath' as a reward for the quest 'Win the Smithy Competition!']

'Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal.'

Ttiring~

[Red Phoenix's Breath]

A blessing of the Red Phoenix.

It will increase fire resistance by 30%.

It can be used to infuse items with the powerful aura of the Red Phoenix.

However, it can also be attached to items with a strong fire attribute.

Weight: 2

“Hah.”

It turned out that the title of Pangea’s Person of Virtue wasn’t the only reward. This was the true compensation for the Red Phoenix Bow.

“If you use this, it will become the real Red Phoenix Bow?”

Han Seokbong nodded at Grid’s question.

“That’s right. It’s the energy of fire that won’t die forever. There is no stronger fire energy.”

‘Amazing!’

It was truly amazing. He couldn’t imagine how powerful it would be when harmonized with the white phosphorus tree.

‘This is a reward worthy of making a legendary rated item!’

Wasn’t it possible to upgrade the Red Phoenix Bow to a myth rating if he combined with with the Red Phoenix Breath? Grid was delighted and a smile appeared on Han Seokbong’s face. Pangea had a total of three Red Phoenix Breaths. One of them belonged to the original Red Phoenix Bow that was stolen, so there were only two left. It wasn’t something that should be given to Grid. If the Red Phoenix Bow was ever lost again, it might not be able to be restored.

However, Han Seokbong was a man who knew how to repay favors. The Red Phoenix Bow that Grid made was more valuable than the original, so it was right to reward him with the most precious thing.

‘I don’t have to repeat the same mistakes.’

He wouldn’t allow the Red Phoenix Bow to be lost again.

Grid asked Han Seokbong, “By the way, where is the castle’s dungeon?”

Han Seokbong laughed at the question.

“You can enter it through a well in the west of the castle.”

"I see."

Armored needles! Silver thread! A new hunting ground. Grid's fantasy about the dungeon that only a specific number of people could enter was too big. He was so excited that he wanted to jump forward, but Han Seokbong stopped him.

"It's true that you have the right to enter the castle's dungeon. However, you can't arbitrarily access the dungeon as before."

"Eh? I have access rights, but I can't freely access it?"

"This is for your safety. You can enter if you have a complete guard escort."

"Guards?"

Han Seokbong looked at White with a bitter expression.

"Years ago, our Pangea suffered a terrible incident and lost a great blacksmith. Dawwhite... He was Boss White's father."

Dawwhite won the championship and gained entrance to the castle's dungeon. He was murdered by an armored needle. Then the lord realized. The lord couldn't completely protect the weak.

"Anyone who enters the castle's dungeon must be fully equipped to protect themselves. You can only enter the dungeon if you have a minimum of six silver or gold class mercenaries to escort you."

"..."

Mercenaries meant those who moved only for money. But Grid was Pagma's Descendant, not an ordinary blacksmith. Since he was powerful, he didn't want to spend money on hiring mercenaries. There was no reason to do so.

"I have enough strength to protect my body."

"Everyone says that."

"No, I'm serious."

"Hrmm..."

Han Seokbong looked Grid up and down. Grid was wearing worn-out clothing. He might give off an unknown dignity, but he seemed vulnerable when it came to defense.

"In your current state, you will die if you are just scratched by the armored needle or silver thread."

"Then what about this?"

Clink!

Clink clink!

As always, Grid was dressed in beginners' clothing. Now he pulled out the Triple Layers from his inventory. His body was armed in an instant and Han Seokbong and White's eyes widened.

'A blacksmith can wear such heavy armor?'

'Yes, a person of distinction... He has the strength and stamina of the greatest blacksmith.'

Due to the nature of the job, strength and stamina were important for blacksmithing. A top blacksmith might have as much strength and stamina as a knight. It wasn't unrealistic for Grid to wear such heavy armor. Yes, he was convinced at this point. But it was still dangerous for Grid.

"Just because you can wear armor with your high strength and stamina, you don't have the skills to deal with it. You can't bring out the ability of the armor even if you're wearing it."

The absence of heavy armor mastery. In other words, the penalty was being pointed out. Those who wore heavy armor without a mastery couldn't even apply half the power of the armor. Grid spoke to the concerned Han Seokbong with a confident expression.

"I will be fine."

Pagma's Descendant was technically classified as a non-combat profession. The

passive effect of Pagma's Swordsmanship was similar to that of Sword Mastery, but he didn't have any armor mastery skills. It was a fatal drawback. However, he didn't get penalized when wearing items. In other words, Grid couldn't bring out 101% of the armour effect, but he could bring out 100%.

'Most of the other people were too confident and took risks. That is the nature of distinguished people.'

Han Seokbong bitterly thought that Grid and Dawhite before he died were similar. He pulled out a trump card.

"Then prove it."

"Prove?"

"Yes, there's a gatekeeper to the entrance of the dungeon. He has an attack power similar to the armored needle. Try to endure one of his blows."

Of course, he would instruct the gatekeeper to adjust his power. If the gatekeeper used his real force, then Grid would die.

'I will command him to use 30% of his power... That's enough to not kill him.'

Grid would just faint for a few days. Han Seokbong had this thought and guided Grid and White to the entrance of the castle's dungeon.

White's complexion was dark as he followed. Like Grid, White was in a position to access the dungeon.

'I want to get revenge on my father and earn some silver thread... '

But it was impossible for him to even enter! He felt ashamed.

Grid placed a hand on White's shoulder. "The mass production Grid set... It's a good armor that you can wear with your level and strength. How about it? Do you want to borrow it?"

"Hah. C-Can I really?"

White trusted Grid completely. Grid smiled without any doubts.

“The hourly rental fee is 500 gold. Call?”

In fact, Grid wanted to charge a separate price. However, it was hard to behave so cruelly to White.

“I will offer up everything I own if I can get past the gatekeeper’s trial.”

The deal was established. The satisfied Grid opened his inventory. Then he pulled out a mass production Grid set placed in a corner of the inventory. It was a Grid set with a unique rating that had been enhanced to +7. It was the one worn by Reidan’s young knight, Royman.

‘That woman... Is she growing well?’

He wasn’t talking about her breasts. He was referring to her skills as a knight. Royman was a talent picked and trained by Piaro. Grid’s expectations for her were high.



“We've arrived.”

A few minutes after Grid and White concluded the deal. The party finally reached the well in the west of the castle. It was the entrance to the dungeon. A two meter tall man stood beside it as a guard.

“The experience of being hit by this man who can crush rocks into powder. Do you have to go through it?”

Han Seokbong asked Grid one last time.

“Hit me. I will be okay.”

Ah, by the way.

"White, you might get hurt. This gatekeeper isn't normal."

“...Huh?”

White was pale, but believed in the armor that Grid lent him. On the other hand, a person was watching them with an unpleasant face. It was the daughter of Han

Seokbong, a knight belonging to the castle dungeon exploration team.

Chapter 537

Rare treasures, herbs, and various battle gear could be obtained from the dungeon underneath Pangea's castle. In particular, people coveted the silver thread produced by the armored needles and called Pangea's dungeon a treasure house. It was a land of opportunity that everyone wanted access to.

Pangea's knights and soldiers were exasperated by this. The castle's dungeon was a treasure house? A land of opportunity? It was all crazy talk. The castle's dungeon was hell. It was the worst place on this earth that was filled with powerful and atrocious monsters.

Today, and tomorrow as well. The knights and soldiers had to go on expeditions to stop the monsters in the dungeon from looking for trouble in Pangea. They risked their lives, and now those seeking riches demanded entrance to the dungeon. A volunteer with no combat skills was just a burden on them. For example, these blacksmiths.

'These blacksmiths have no shame.'

Grid and White arrived with Han Seokbong. The blacksmiths who won this year's competition were enemies in the eyes of the knights. They hated the blacksmiths for coming with such a light heart, while they shed blood in the dungeon. In this cold atmosphere, Han Seokbong's daughter Sua came forward.

"Father."

"Oh, Sua."

Sua was a beautiful woman who could be called the first beauty of the kingdom. Moreover, she was gentle, intelligent, and excellent at martial arts. Han Seokbong always boasted about her achievements. She was the captain of the dungeon exploration team, the Red Phoenix Group.

She looked like an actress in a historical drama with her black hair tied up with a hairpin and her luxurious clothing.

'Pretty.'

Grid couldn't help admiring Sua. It was very rare.

Who was Grid? He was the husband of Irene and surrounded by the most beautiful women in the world, Jishuka and Yua. He even had a pretty little sister. In other words, Grid was very familiar with beauty. He was a man who didn't feel inspired when seeing beauty.

But he was overwhelmed the moment he saw Sua. The thick lips and glaring eyes captivated Grid's mind.

'There is something mysterious... '

Was it because they were both Asians? Grid compared Sua to Yura, not Jishuka and Irene. Due to her overwhelming beauty, Yura made the surrounding scenery black and white. If she was a blooming flower, Sua was the moonlight. She gave off a cool feeling that made him feel a strange lust. Was it the curves of her white neck?

He couldn't deny it, but there was something irritating him. There was a sense of disturbance despite her elegance.

'Maybe... '

Grid realized something. Sua was a similar age to Grid. She was more mature than Yura, who was a few years younger.

'Won't Yura change once she matures over the next few years?'

Although her chest was unknown.

'It will be sad if she gets medical help.'

Grid was interrupted while thinking useless thoughts.

"Is the expedition prepared?"

"Yes, we do this every day."

"I was told by Captain Horang that the speed that the monsters are expanding their area is becoming faster... I am very worried about how long the Red Phoenix Group can endure."

“We all know that it’s over for Pangea if we fall. Don’t worry. We’re managing the schedule and taking care of our physical state.”

Han Seokbong and Sua were talking about a heavy matter. Based on the contents of the conversation, the monsters in the dungeon were constantly expanding their area and becoming a threat to Pangea.

‘They can’t ask for help because of the monster community in the north.’

Then he had a question.

‘What are the yangbans doing?’

They were people were powers that he estimated to be equivalent to legends. In addition, the Hwan Kingdom they belonged to were affiliated with the Cho Kingdom. It was said that Pangea’s Red Phoenix Bow was given to them by the Hwan Kingdom. Based on this, it was interpreted that the yangbans of the Hwan Kingdom would help out Pangea.

‘It would be easy for the yangbans to solve the monster community in the north or the problem of the castle’s dungeon.’

Then why did the yangbans leave Pangea alone?

‘Well, it’s good for me.’

He could obtain this excellent hunting ground. A huge grin emerged on Grid’s face. He avoided Sua’s eyes. It was because his face would redden whenever he met her eyes. After the disappointment of his first love, Grid became very conscious of the opposite sex.

"Hmm hmm, I want to enter the castle’s dungeon."

Rather than Han Seokbong, Sua was the one who responded to Grid’s words.

"Can I ask why you would like to enter the castle’s dungeon?"

Sua gave an oddly bewitching smile. Grid blushed the moment he met her eyes and tried to calmly reply.

"I want to get the silver thread."

"Do you know how to obtain the silver thread? Oh, I was impolite. I'm Han Sua, and I'm the captain of the Red Phoenix Group that is in charge of the dungeon exploration. Please forgive me for the late introduction."

Sua bowed slightly and reached out to shake Grid's hand. But Grid couldn't hold her hand. His ears were red and he avoided looking at her. At this moment, Sua's black eyes shone strangely.

'This man...'

It was obvious that he was someone who didn't have experience with women. Sua thought he was funny. But that was it. She had no private interest.

"I've already heard that you have succeeded in restoring the Red Phoenix Bow. Congratulations. I represent the people of Pangea and will pay back this grace. For example, giving you the silver thread as a gift."

"...!"

Grid's eyes shone as he heard he would be given the silver thread as a gift. It was a gift with tremendous value. But the two men had made up their minds.

"No, I will get the silver thread directly."

Grid wanted to experience a new dungeon that would give him experience and raise his level. In addition, he wanted to help White get revenge for his father's death by killing the armored needles. The two men were burning with fighting spirit.

"The only way to get the silver thread is to hunt down the armored needles. But the armored needles are very strong. There are countless people who have lost their lives to this monster. One of them was Dawwhite."

"..."

"It is impossible for you to hunt an armored needle when you aren't a warrior. It's dangerous even if you go with our expedition. Unfortunately, I can't allow you access to the dungeon."

"Didn't the lord say I can enter if I resist one attack from the gatekeeper?"

Sua's expression changed at Grid's words.

"The gatekeeper isn't an ordinary person, but a member of the Ung clan. He hasn't learned martial arts, but his natural abilities surpass the imagination. Do you think you can endure the attack of the gatekeeper that is as powerful as the armored needle? Don't hurt yourself and give up."

'Ung clan?'

The gatekeeper standing by the well. He was over 2 meters tall and had a large belly. However, he wasn't obese. It was just that his species was larger than others.

'Let's do it.'

Grid shrugged.

"Don't worry. I can withstand it."

Grid tried to be as calm as possible. However, he was still uncomfortable and couldn't meet Sua's eyes. He was extremely conscious of Sua.

Sua scoffed at Grid. 'The pride of an immature man is useless.'

This futile pride could drive a person to their limits.

'He can't imagine it.'

Han Seokbong sighed and whispered to Sua.

"This is Pangea's savior. Can't you do it this once since your father is asking?"

"I am refusing because he's our savior. What if his body gets hurt?"

"But look at the armor that he's wearing. Doesn't it seem durable? He might not be able to use the armor properly, but at least survival is guaranteed. In addition, tell Ung to use only 30% of his power."

"..."

Certainly, the armor looked really durable. It was armor made by stacking many iron plates sculpted to look like dragon scales. It was a beautiful masterpiece.

"10% is enough. Otherwise he might be unconscious for a few days."

"Yes, you thought well. We will let him know not to be too greedy."

Nod.

Sua led Grid and White towards the gatekeeper. Gatekeeper Ung. He didn't care about the lord coming with precious guests. He was yawning while looking at the distant mountain.

"What?"

Sua whispered to Ung, who was scratching his head and looking confused.

"Hit one of them. Use 10% of your strength."

"I understand."

Ung snorted like a bull and moved his huge arms. At that moment.

"Prepare to move them to the infirmary."

Sua commanded the members of the Red Phoenix Group.

Peeeeeeong!

Ung's fist slammed into Grid's belly. There was a sound wave as the sound of something hitting metal was heard.

"This...!"

Sua was stunned. Ung seemed to have used at least 50% of his strength.

"No!"

Han Seokbong paled. The person who restored the Red Phoenix Bow was going to be killed in front of him because he made a mistake.

“What’s the fuss?”

It happened when the Red Phoenix members were making troubled expressions.

Shake shake.

The fist stuck in Grid’s belly started shaking.

“...Huh?”

Han Seokbong, Sua, and the Red Phoenix members were shocked.

‘Why...’

‘Ung is making a pained expression?’

That’s right. The big face of Ung was distorting. It turned red and sweat dripped down. On the other hand, Grid was fine. His expression was calm.

‘This is impossible!’

‘This can’t be.’

Han Seokbong and Sua were amazed. They were expecting his intestines to be ruptured and his bones smashed, but Grid was fine? How solid was his armor? Someone muttered while Han Seokbong and Sua were speechless.

“If he has this much defense, he will be able to save his life when attacked by an armored needle.”

Grid was permitted access to the castle’s dungeon. But Grid looked troubled. Why?

[You have suffered severe damage.]

[Triple Layers has reduced the physical damage by 30%.]

[You have suffered 2,303 damage.]

Ung's swinging fist was judged not to be a cut or a stab. It was considerable damage when taking into account that Triple Layers' 50% damage reduction wasn't activated. But this was only 10% of Ung's power. The attack of the armored needle would be several times more painful.

'Armored needle... They are much stronger than I expected.'

They seemed more like boss monsters than ordinary monsters. If they appeared in large quantities, he would have to stop their attacks as much as possible.

'It's hard to operate the God Hands in the narrow dungeon.'

This was a battlefield where extreme control was needed. Grid became tense. But White was even more nervous. He was extremely shocked when he saw the wound on the man's hand that struck Grid.

"That... I'll give up today."

White thought that he could pay back his father's enemies in another way. He was a wise man.

Chapter 538

"It's a good idea."

Based on Ung's fist, the monsters were a lot more powerful than Grid expected. He had no confidence that White could survive. White's declaration that he would step down was very much in line with Grid's thoughts.

'At least he isn't a disruptive character.'

White was a middle-aged black man. Grid seriously liked him. He was looking at White with satisfaction when Sua approached.

"It's great that you are fine after being hit by Ung. Did you make this armor yourself?"

Grid was able to withstand the attack for a reason. It was thanks to his stamina stat, not just Triple Layers. Grid had a huge 1,500 points in stamina. Grid's minimum defense was equivalent to tankers in the mid-200s. But Sua wasn't aware of this fact.

From a common sense perspective, it was impossible for Grid to have high stamina when he was a blacksmith. Sua thought that Grid's high defense was only due to his armor.

"I made the armor."

Chwaruruk!

Grid puffed up his chest, highlighting the beautiful appearance of Triple Layers even further. The hundreds of black scales shone as they moved with Grid's body, showing a superb art form created by a craftsman.

"Okay. I won't stop you any longer. You're someone who can access the dungeon. However, if you want to preserve your body, be prepared to act according to our instructions."

"Yes."

Grid didn't pay much attention to the instructions. Sua had been consistently polite from the beginning and her intentions were purely for Grid's sake. There was no reason for Grid to think badly of Sua.

'Well, I'll end up doing what I want anyway.'

Sua and the Red Phoenix members might be the elite troops, but they would have to concentrate on the armored needles instead of Grid after entering the dungeon. They wouldn't have the capacity to control Grid.

'Still, I won't cross the line.'

Considering the background of the East Continent and the strength of the armored needles, the skills of the Red Phoenix Group were probably above the Red Knights that he had met. It wasn't unusual for them to be fourth advancement classes and to be stronger than Grid. They weren't good people to become enemies with.

'It would be fun to observe them one by one with the Great Lord's Sword. I will take any talented people to Reidan.'

As Grid was feeling greedy, the Red Phoenix team finished their preparations and started to enter the well one by one. They fell down the deep well without any hesitation.

"Let's go."

"Yes."

Sua and Grid were left at the end.

"Please be careful."

Sua was worried about Grid getting hurt. Her actions of trying to protect Grid made him smile.

'Her sense of responsibility is unbelievably strong.'

He had a good feeling. It wasn't just because her touch on his arm was tender.



[You have entered the dungeon of Pangea's castle.]

[The inner wall of the dungeon sucks out light. Using light tools or magic is meaningless.]

[Your field of view has narrowed.]

[This is a physical phenomenon. It can't be resisted.]

[You can only see within 5 meters of you.]

'It's worse than the vampire's dungeon.'

A darkness without any light. It was a darkness that seemed hard to adapt to, no matter how much time passed. Grid felt the need to estimate the size and shape of the dungeon. His fingers reached out to touch the wall and ended up stroking someone's skin.

At that moment.

"Haaack!"

A Red Phoenix member groaned as he was touched by Grid. The bearded man in his 40's flushed and made a strange sound. It wasn't good to see. His legs trembled and weakened.

"Hey Ryu! I know that you have a lot of energy, but there is a time and a place!"

"Doing something so wretched on the battlefield..."

"At a time like this, when we're with Captain Sua..."

The Red Phoenix members seriously misunderstood.

Stagger.

Ryu felt chagrin as his body barely recovered.

“I was just walking along! I didn’t do what you imagined!”

“Making that sound just by walking?”

“No, something suddenly caressed my wrist!”

“...”

Feeling like that just from his wrist being touched? Sua smiled at Ryu’s absurd plea.

“Your body is very sensitive.”

Ryu was ashamed and couldn’t raise his head, while Sua looked at him with interest. Grid thought it was like a cat with fish placed in front of it.

‘That pervert.’

Sua probably wasn’t to his taste after all.

‘The mild Irene turns into a beast in the...’

How much wilder would it be with Sua?

‘I should watch my hands.’

Since he could only do it once a month, Grid hid his hands behind his back and gulped.

Flash!

Grid’s higher insight caught something shining in the darkness before anyone else.

‘Thread?’

The dungeon passage allowed five heavily armed soldiers to walk side by side. The thread spread out like spiderwebs on one of the paths suddenly shone.

‘It can’t be... Is that silver thread?’

The moment Grid felt astonished.

“An armored needle!”

The Red Phoenix Group discovered it one step later than Grid and prepared for battle. They pulled the bow and aimed at all the other passages apart from the one blocked by the silver thread.

Step, step.

The bows aimed at the passage that footsteps were coming from.

"It's coming!"

Pik!

Pipipipipit!

The Red Phoenix members attacked in unison. It was quick and accurate archery.

Puk!

Puuooooook!

“Kuwaaaah!”

A scream rang out from the dark passage. It was proof that the arrows of the Red Phoenix members had hit their target.

“Isn’t it great?”

Measuring the position of an invisible target using sound and shooting the arrow accurately.

‘What is their Bow Mastery level?’

Grid admired it while Sua handed him a yellow talisman.

“During the battle, I can’t pay attention to your safety. Please have this talisman.”

[The Protection Talisman has been acquired.]

[It can invalidate an enemy attack when carried. This effect can only be used once.]

[After defeating an enemy's attack, your defense will increase by 20% for two minutes.]

[The item will disappear after the effect ends.]

'A one time invincible buff item?'

It was unfortunate that it would be destroyed, but it had a great effect. In particular, it would be godly in PvP or raids. It would sell for a huge price if it could be traded between players.

'The Red Phoenix Group is giving me such a valuable item... '

Grid felt a great appreciation towards Sua. But he was soon disappointed.

'It's an untradable item?'

He couldn't even move it to his pet inventory. His plan to keep it and sell it later was useless.

'Maybe it will be consumed in this dungeon.'

Grid clicked his tongue with regret.

"Kuwaaah!"

Four armored needles with arrows piercing their bodies finally showed up. They were zombies wearing bamboo hats. Their silver armor was melting down, embedding in the rotten blood vessels of the zombies. Based on this, Grid deduced one fact.

'The blood of the armored needles are hot enough to melt silver.'

It was a good idea to avoid their blood when attacking the armored needles.

‘I have to rely on the God Hands for this part.’

Chaaeng!

Chaeeeeeng!

The Red Phoenix members started to deal with the five armored needles. They actively used swordsmanship, which was even better than the archery skills they showed before. But the armored needles were undead monsters. They couldn’t feel pain and weren’t afraid of wounds. They fought fiercely despite being stabbed by the Red Phoenix members’ swords.

Peeeeeong!

The swordsmanship of the armored needles combined power and speed. They were so fast and powerful that the Red Phoenix members couldn’t avoid the blows. They had to defend, forcing them to take a few steps back every time. Some of them fell down.

‘But.’

In Grid’s eyes, the armored needles weren’t a match for the Red Phoenix members.

The Red Phoenix members were really proficient in battle and had high stats. There was surprisingly no fourth advancement class, but the armored needles were thoroughly marked due to the number superiority. It seemed impossible for the armored needles to hurt the group.

However, this was a rash judgment. The armored needles started showing their true skills.

Chwarururuk!

“Be careful!”

The armored needles realized that swordsmanship alone wasn’t enough to overpower the enemies and simultaneously changed battle modes. After inflating the muscles of their body, they extracted the silver thread embedded in their rotten blood vessels.

Then they used the thread to threaten the Red Phoenix members.

“Ugh!”

The Red Phoenix members became busy. The silver thread was like a living serpent that stretched out in all directions. Sweat flowed down as they focused on protecting their bodies.

‘How hard is it?’

The silver pieces melted into the blood vessels and the armored needles used them as weapons. The situation changed rapidly the moment the silver thread was used as a weapon. The Red Phoenix couldn’t find a way to counterattack and also had to protect their bodies.

‘Certainly... It is very tricky.’

One armored needle took out around 8~15 strands of silver thread that were 10 meters long. The armored needles used great skill to wield all the strands freely at the enemies.

‘That can’t be avoided. I have to definitely fight with the God Hands.’

It might be different if someone like Regas or Faker were here, but no one present could act freely in front of the silver thread.

Jjejejeok!

Pepepepeong!

The silver thread was very strong. When it encountered the sword of a Red Phoenix member, the member was thrown into the air and pierced the ground or wall like a bullet.

‘Sometimes it’s like a blade, and sometimes a whip...’

The durability was also considerable, seeing that the thread didn’t get damaged by the swords and armor of the Red Phoenix members. There was a reason why the blacksmiths of the East Continent considered the silver thread to be the best material.

‘It looks like a version of pavranium that is as thin as a thread. What is possible?’

What items could be made with the silver thread? As Grid’s infinite imagination as a blacksmith ran wild, the Red Phoenix group was facing a great crisis.

“They have appeared!”

There were two main reasons for blocking the passage with the silver thread. The first was to block the intruders from escaping. The second was to buy time for the armored needles to fuse together. The fusion of the armored needles was terrible.

At least two armored needles were connected together with silver thread and became one. Of course, there was no inconvenience with their movements due to the seamless connection. Therefore, it could be described as a monster optimized for war, with at least two extra limbs.

“Kyaaaaaah!”

The sound of the monster’s roar exploded from the pathway blocked by the silver thread.

“Everyone retreat!”

Sua had never experienced facing four armored needles at the same time and instructed the Red Phoenix members to retreat. But the armored needles didn’t allow them to leave. The silver thread shot out like spiderwebs to block the retreat. The Red Phoenix members’ attempt to get to the passage behind Grid was blocked off.

“This...!”

The Red Phoenix fell into confusion. A fused armored needle with four limbs and five ordinary ones ran at them! Danger was approaching. Sua felt a strong sense of responsibility. She was the captain of the Red Phoenix group and successor of Han Seokbong. She couldn’t let the Red Phoenix members and the saviour of Pangea, Grid, die in this place. She flew forward without hesitation and faced the armoured needles alone.

“I will buy time while you run away!”

“Captain!”

“Young Lady!”

The Red Phoenix members couldn't stop her. Sua was the fastest among them and had already fallen into the middle of the enemies. However, Grid was beside her.

“You!?”

No, what was with this blacksmith? Why did he come to die when she sacrificed herself to let him run away? Sua thought it was absurd when an unexpected development occurred.

“Pagma's Swordsmanship.”

Intense energy moved around Grid as he completed the sword dance and wielded the +9 Failure.

“Wave.”

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

A powerful light was shot from Failure and moved through the darkness.

Chapter 539

Pagma's Swordsmanship, Wave, had the lowest attack power among all the techniques. The level 6 Wave only dealt 230% of his attack power. It was a little over double his flat damage. It was incredibly low for a legendary rated skill. It was occasionally a powerful skill considering it was a 'wide area' attack. However, this lost its utility after the skills of the third advancement classes were released.

But it still had unique strengths. All targets hit by it would be affected by a slowing effect. In other words, it was a wide area CC skill, and it was natural for the attack power to be low. This was if the user was an ordinary player.

"Wave."

The white light that was emitted only by a +9 enhanced weapon. A powerful light wave of energy was shot from Failure. The bodies of the armored needles chasing after the Red Phoenix members were damaged.

Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The explosion shook the dungeon. Blood spurted from the armored needles while parts of the dungeon failed to survive the aftermath of the shock.

[You have dealt 15,310 damage to the target. The target's speed will decrease by 63%.]

[You have dealt 16,004 damage to the target. The target's...]

[You have dealt...]

...

...

"Y-You...?"

Sua stared at Grid with a stunned expression. A blacksmith using swordsmanship? It was also extremely strong swordsmanship!

“What is your identity?”

Sua was confused. Grid placed extra strength in the arm wrapped around her waist. It was to protect her from the blood that was like lava that came from the armored needles. But it wasn't easy. It was impossible to avoid all the blood with Grid's control abilities.

'The blood dissolves anything it touches.'

It was impossible for a person to be safe. In the end, Grid called for the best assistance.

“God Hands!”

Pa pa pa pat!

Four golden hands appeared immediately in response to Grid's call and moved quickly. They protected Sua and Grid as much as possible from the blood.

Chiiiiik!

The God Hands burned fiercely when touched by the armored needles' blood. Sua's surprise became larger.

'They are fine despite being hit by the armored needles' blood and can move by themselves?'

The East Continent people had wide imaginations. In the treasure houses of the various kingdoms, there were many things outside common sense. Yes, like the golden hands currently summoned by Grid. That's right. In Sua's eyes, the God Hands looked like divine beings and Grid was a daoist, which was how he could use swordsmanship despite being a blacksmith. He was mysterious and overwhelming.

On the other hand, Grid was relieved.

'Thank god she is wearing armor.'

Grid had hesitated when he was about to put an arm around Sua to protect her. He was

worried about what would happen if she experienced his hands. Fortunately, Sua was wearing excellent armor. No matter how dexterous Grid's fingers, it was impossible to cause someone to feel pleasure by touching armor. Sua luckily didn't feel Grid's touch.

"Step back."

The armored needles were currently slowed. Grid handed Sua to the Red Phoenix members and urged them to move away.

"What is his real identity?"

"A blacksmith using swordsmanship..."

"I heard he used the white phosphorus wood to restore the Red Phoenix Bow. Is he really a daoist?"

"They don't know Pagma's name?"

White once mentioned a legendary blacksmith. In addition, Pagma was a person presumed to be born on the East Continent. Grid thought that people on the East Continent would know Pagma. However, that didn't seem to be the case.

'Well, not everyone will know a legendary blacksmith.'

It was likely that Pagma didn't have as much reputation on the East Continent because he was more active on the West Continent.

'My reputation here might transcend Pagma's reputation.'

His heart jumped at this thought. An area that couldn't be reached by others. Grid felt joy at the opportunity to gain new achievements. Grid's smile was distorted with greed as he questioned Sua and the Red Phoenix members.

"All of you are careless for a group who has been steadily exploring the dungeon. Are you originally like this? Or are you in bad shape today?"

Grid felt great disappointment in the Red Phoenix members. Experiencing a crisis in their first engagement after entering the dungeon, it was absurd and pathetic. The armored needles were strong, but the skills of the Red Phoenix group wasn't as much as he expected.

“That...”

Grid's sarcastic tone. It was enough to undermine their pride as those who dedicated their lives to defending Pangea. But the Red Phoenix didn't get offended. No, they couldn't feel offended. They weren't qualified. They understood Grid's tone.

“...”

Sua explained instead of the silent Red Phoenix members.

“Originally, the armored needles rarely travel together. We have been coming here for several years and this is the first time we've been attacked by five.”

The basic tactic of the Red Phoenix group was to form a team of eight people. Eight people were needed to hunt one armored needle, and the highest number that had appeared at one time was three. It was unusual for five of the armored needles to appear at the same time. The Red Phoenix members deserved praise for not instantly falling into confusion.

But the result? It was the worst. They would've surely been wiped out if it wasn't for Grid.

“I don't mean to imply that we are unlucky today. I am deeply embarrassed by our inability to thoroughly prepare for today's situation. And... Thank you.”

Grid didn't respond to the bowing Sua. It was because of the conflict between the armored needles and the God Hands!

‘Already?’

Grid was confused. Including the fused undead, there were a total of six armored needles. But still, what were the God Hands? He thought he could take advantage of the infinite stiffness and bind their feet for at least 20 seconds. But it failed to last even half of 20 seconds.

‘They can break Mjolnir's offensive with their slow attacks?’

Grid realized when he faced the fist of the gatekeeper, but the armored needles were strong. The evidence was that they overpowered the God Hands. The lead God Hand. It held the Ultimate Enhanced Mjolnir and was the one with maximum power. It had

fought for ages, but was now bound by the silver thread. The remaining three God Hands were hurriedly avoiding the silver thread.

‘I have to go hard.’

Grid categorized them as boss monsters and summoned Noe and Randy.

“Noe!”

“Nyang!”

There was a funny sound effect as Noe appeared and cried out.

“The best demonic beast of hell has emerged! Nyang!”

“Randy!”

“I will help.”

Then Randy appeared and copied Grid’s appearance.

A talking cat. Two Grids.

The Red Phoenix members were astonished as they watched Grid.

‘Sacred creature!’

‘A clone!’

‘Daoist! He is definitely a daoist!’

It was natural for the Red Phoenix members to think so. Grid was too special. Grid didn’t care about what they were thinking and ordered Noe and Randy.

"Noe, take the stats of the fused armoured needle. Randy will use ranged skills to help me. Make a gap so that the God Hands can strike the armored needles."

"I understand! Nyang!"

“Yes.”

Grid was convinced when he saw the armored needles break the God Hands' infinite stiffness. The Red Phoenix members weren't weak. They were the elites of the elites. It was just that the armored needles were too strong. Thus, it would be a challenge of strength. There was no room to hold back his strength.

"Linked Kill Wave."

The armored needles were undead monsters. Their intelligence was significantly low. They moved without thinking and conflicted with each other when moving along the relatively narrow passage. It was impossible for them to avoid Grid's Linked Kill Wave in this passage.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Linked Kill Wave boasted damage that was several times higher than Wave. It shot out eight energy blades that contained 1,500% of his attack power. The armored needles hit by them were instantly turned to rags and their health gauge fell by more than half.

Grid's momentum increased. He calmly decided to finish them off as they rushed over.

'If possible, let's try not to consume the talisman in this fight.'

It meant that he couldn't be hit! It was ridiculous to deal with six boss monsters without being hit. However, Grid was serious.

"Transcend."

The scene of transcendence was completed in an instant as Grid's hair was swept upwards. Grid's ears and sharp eyes were exposed as he stepped back from the armored needles and wielded his sword twice.

Then two energy blades shot out.

Pepeng!

Pepepeng!

"Kyaak!"

The fraudulent ability of Transcend had been proven many times. It replaced Grid's

default attack with ranged attacks that had double his attack power. What if a buff skill was used in this state? It was a bombardment that no one could endure.

“Blacksmith's Rage.”

[Blacksmith's Rage has been used. Attack power will increase by 25% and attack speed will increase by 40% for 35 seconds.]

“Kyaaaak!”

The armored needles were angry. They were angry at being hit by their prey. They started moving quicker towards Grid.

Pepepepeng!

Pepepepeok!

After using Blacksmith's Rage, Grid wielded the sword three or four times while stepping back. The momentum of the armored needles decreased. In particular, the one at the forefront was on the verge of having its health extinguished. Grid was excited.

“Hahat! Kuhahahahat! You are too slow!”

“...”

Sua and the Red Phoenix members were just watching the battle. The evil that had taken so many lives. The ghastly armored needles were just scarecrows in front of Grid.

"How can he be so stro... Ah!"

The Red Phoenix members flinched in unison.

Puooook!

It was because a few strands of silver thread appeared behind Grid. An armored needle secretly shot it through the ground in order to attack Grid.

"Danger!"

Sua hurriedly shouted but it was too late. Grid was busy with the armored needles in front of him and not paying attention to the rear.

"Ah...!"

The moment that Sua and the Red Phoenix members felt desperate.

"Come out! Overgeared Skeletons!"

Pahat!

A little ahead of where the silver thread emerged. Two skeletons popped up behind Grid. Then they were hit by the silver thread instead of Grid.

"Huh?"

There were a large number of people on the East Continent who could summon skeletons. But it was uncommon for people to use them as shields. Grid summoned the skeletons again.

'It is good that the East Continent has a high mana regeneration rate.'

It was the environment that best harmonized with the Ring of Absurdity.

Clack! Clack clack clack clack!

Peok! Pasak!

Noe, Randy and the God Hands were used for attack purposes, while the strands of silver thread were blocked by the Overgeared Skeletons. Then a notification window popped up in front of him.

[Overgeared Skeleton (1) and Overgeared Skeleton (2) are gradually growing

accustomed to the silver thread.]

Chapter 540

[Overgeared Skeleton (1) and Overgeared Skeleton (2) are gradually growing accustomed to the silver thread.]

“Wow.”

The Overgeared Skeletons had a concept of growing skeletons. The Overgeared Skeletons were so special that even Braham, who had the ‘most of the world is trivial’ mentality, advised that it would be better to give the Overgeared Skeletons an opportunity to learn.

However, the Overgeared Skeletons started at level 1 and their basic stats and growth rate were low. Grid didn’t have much expectation for the Overgeared Skeletons.

‘I thought they would be useless for a few more months.’

This was a mistake. The Overgeared Skeletons could be summoned freely within one meter of Grid. The Overgeared Skeletons were able to faithfully fulfill their role as a shield, even at level 1. Their potential was also exploding thanks to their unique learning abilities. It was amazing that they became accustomed to the silver thread after dying nine times.

‘The fact that they are accustomed to it means they’ve grasped the characteristics of the silver thread?’

The Overgeared Skeletons were able to analyze the elements of the silver thread and the attack patterns while dying nine times. Then they could construct a body that more effectively resisted the attacks of the silver thread.

‘I would say that they are a two time shield, not a one time shield... No, that’s too much.’

Once again, the Overgeared Skeletons were only level 1. At level 1, they had 3 strength, 3 stamina, 3 agility and 1 intelligence. Their total health was 45 points. The Overgeared Skeletons would still die even if they analyzed the silver thread and

strengthened their bodies.

‘Hrmm... Once I return to the village, I should catch chickens and raise their level.’

It was great to see the Overgeared Skeletons grow.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Grid kept the armored needles in front of him in check.

Chwarururuk!

The silver thread in the rear once again threatened Grid. Grid scoffed. He drank a mana potion and once again summoned the Overgeared Skeletons.

“Come out!”

Clack! Clack!

The Overgeared Skeletons made a distinctive sound as they emerged from the ground. Grid previously hated this noise, but now it sounded good.

‘These pretty guys. Now, become a shield with that hardened body... Eh?’

Grid doubted his eyes. The Overgeared Skeletons summoned at the place where the silver thread was heading. The skeletons summoned to be a shield for their master were avoiding the silver thread instead?

"Eh?"

What were they doing? Of course, Grid standing behind the Overgeared Skeletons was hit by the silver thread instead.

Jjejejeok!

[You have been attacked!]

[The Protection Talisman has been activated!]

[A shield to block the damage has been created!]

[Your defense will increase by 20% for 2 minutes.]

“ ... ”

He lost his talisman that he wanted to save for bosses? It was also because of his pet! Grid thought it was absurd and closed his eyes for a moment, before exploding in anger.

“You stupid things!”

He summoned them to act as shields, only for them to avoid the damage? The Overgeared Skeletons stared back at Grid. There wasn't a single bit of guilt in their expressions. It was natural. A pet was obligated to be helpful to their master if summoned.

However, the Overgeared Skeletons had already been killed nine times by the silver thread. It meant the Overgeared Skeletons weren't faithful to their roles after growing. The sparkling thread killed them every time they were summoned. Their first priority was to survive and succeed.

[The Overgeared Skeletons (1) and Overgeared Skeletons (2) have acquired the skill 'Avoid the Silver Thread.']

[Avoid the Silver Thread]

Category: Passive

There is a low chance of avoiding the silver thread wielded by the armored needles.

'It isn't a rise in strength, but evasion.'

It was very rare for a pet to acquire the proper skill under their own judgment. The

potential of the Overgeared Skeletons was very high.

‘Can the skeleton warriors grow into death knights?’

Clack! Clack clack!

Their ribs expanded as if they were talking to Grid. It was like they were waiting for compliments.

“Sigh... Yes, well done. Good job.”

Grid lost a huge item, but he was glad to see the potential of the Overgeared Skeletons. Grid laughed and gave an order to the Overgeared Skeletons.

“Stand still and watch how I fight. It can be studied.”

Pepeng! Pepepepeng!

The duration of Transcend was over. Grid quickened the speed at which he swung the +9 Failure. He ignored controlling his stamina and did his best. But it wasn’t a good situation. Why? The armored needles learned how to respond to Grid’s ranged attacks.

Chwarururuk!

The armored needles crossed their silver thread with each other, entangling the silver thread like a spiderweb.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Transcend was blocked by the spiderweb shield.

‘This is great.’

Grid didn’t panic, and instead felt admiration. He knew from the beginning that one strand of silver thread had strength higher than steel. It was rare for the dozens of silver thread layered together to not be able to block any physical force. Yes, it was rare.

“Pagma’s Swordsmanship.”

Taack!

The moment Transcend ended. Grid changed his combat style from intercepting from a distance. He rushed at the armored needles.

“What?”

Sua and the Red Phoenix members were startled. They were confused that the calm Grid would suddenly jump into the enemy.

“Plunging into the range of the silver thread...! It’s dangerous!”

A member of the Red Phoenix group screamed out urgently. The armored needles were strongest when it came to melee ability. It was reckless for Grid to face six armored needles in close combat alone.

“Let’s cover him.”

Sua had the same thought. She decided that she needed to help Grid with the other Red Phoenix members. But after a moment.

“...Huh?”

“Ha!”

Sua and the Red Phoenix members stiffened.

“Pinnacle Kill.”

The web of silver thread protecting the armored needles. There was a white flash as soon as it reached Grid.

Sakak-!

“...!”

The web of silver thread split to the left and right, scattering. Then the armored needle in the front was split apart. It was the moment when the ‘Bisect’ effect of Failure and the ignore 100% defense of Pinnacle Kill was combined.

[Critical!]

[You have defeated an armored needle.]

[123,509,000 experience has been acquired.]

‘Good!’

Once again, the experience lived up to the strength. Grid was delighted at gaining so much experience after defeating one armored needle. At the same time, he broke through the gap and fired Linked Kill.

Puk!

One hit.

Puk puk!

Two hits, three hits!

Puk puk puk!

Four hits, five hits, six hits!!

It was difficult for the armored needles to endure after being subjected to the bombardment of Linked Kill Wave and Linked Kill. They turned to grey as soon as their health was exhausted. But Grid couldn’t let go of his tension. The largest fused armored needle remained.

“Nyang! It hurts!”

Noe screamed from where he was struggling to tie up the fused armored needle alone. Grid hastily shifted his gaze and saw that Noe’s plump body was full of wounds. His fur was covered in dirt and blood. His tail was hanging down and his eyes were moist.

Grid used Restraint to save Noe that was tied up by the silver thread. The fused armored needle stepped back from Grid and the silver thread around Noe was loosened.

"Miong."

Noe flapped his wings tirelessly. He rushed towards Grid, who rubbed Noe's head.

"You suffered. Go and rest."

"Nyang... I will be looking forward to a delicious meal."

Noe immediately returned to the pet inventory. Now the fused armored needle recognized Grid as an enemy.

"Kyaoooooh!"

Teteteteng!

Dozens of silver threads shot towards Grid like a bullet.

Gulp!

Grid swallowed his saliva. The gatekeeper had the same strength as the armored needle. Grid lost 2,303 health when hit by a fist. If he was attacked by the fused armored needle, it meant that a minimum of 23,000 health would be lost. Of course, it was likely that the damage would be much higher. Even Grid would shrink back, despite his high health.

"Quick Movements!"

The silver thread aimed at their target. Grid used a buff to increase his agility and then used Randy and the God Hands to defend. However, the God Hands and Randy could only defend from two or three silver strands each. The rest of the silver thread had to be blocked with Grid's own power.

"Link!"

Chaaeng!

Chaeeeeeng!

It had been a few minutes since they started fighting. Grid was relatively familiar with the pattern of the silver thread and knew that it was difficult to avoid. But the number of silver threads controlled by the fused armored needle was nearly three times higher than the ordinary armored needles. It meant there were still hidden silver threads!

Chwarururuk!

As Grid struck the silver thread, the fused armored needle fired several more.

‘This is bad!’

It couldn’t be avoided. The moment that Grid thought so, several silver thread pierced his chest. Sua and the Red Phoenix members paled.

“Pangea’s Duke of Virtue!”

“Grid!”

Grid was dead. Everybody thought so. However...

[Lantier’s Cloak has reduced the damage of all stabbing and cutting attacks by 20%.]

[Triple Layers has reduced physical damage by 30%.]

[Triple Layers has reduced the damage of stabbing attacks by 50%.]

[You have suffered 2,195 damage.]

[You have suffered 2,308 damage.]

[You have suffered 2,240.....]

[You have suffer...]

...

...

[The enemy's weapon has been caught by the niches in Triple Layers and Sword Break is used.]

[The target's weapon durability has dropped.]

"..."

What? The attack was more itchy than painful! Grid was surprised by the unexpected result, while Sua and the Red Phoenix members were more stunned. It was natural.

Jjejejejeok!

The silver thread was caught in the gaps in Triple Layers and cracked!

"T-This is impossible..."

The silver thread that had killed so many people was damaged by armor. But Grid was fine and managed to neutralize the silver thread.

"How? How are you so strong?"

Sua asked in a trembling voice and Grid replied.

"It's being overgeared."

Peeeeeeong!

The head of the fused armored needle was blown away.

Chapter 541

“Overgeared...?”

It was an unfamiliar word to Sua and the Red Phoenix members. As they were feeling puzzled, the fused armored needle howled.

“Kiyaaaaah~!”

The fused armored needle had taken many lives with overwhelming strength. Today its position was the opposite. Grid was the hunter. For him who was aiming to be at the top of two billion users, the fused armored needle was nothing more than a mass of experience.

“You’re weak.”

Grid laughed at the fused armored needle. The fact that he had been hit by the silver thread had long since disappeared from his memories.

Puk! Seokeok! Puk.

Grid’s Failure cut and stabbed at the armored needle. The increased 20% attack damage in the darkness caused the +9 Failure to be overwhelming.

Puhahahak!

The blood of the fused armored needle rose like a fountain. Grid couldn’t tolerate being hit by that much blood. He tried to avoid as much blood as possible while blocking the rest with the God Hands.

Chiiiiik!

The blood that came into contact with the God Hands evaporated and disappeared.

“Kukukuk!”

The smile didn’t leave Grid’s face as he looked at the fused armored needle through

the gap in the golden fingers.

‘This game is truly about items.’

The armored needle and silver thread. It was weaker than expected, but think about it. What if Grid didn’t have Lantier’s Cloak? Grid would’ve suffered several times the damage and he would be in a great crisis. The armored needle was very strong when handling dozens of silver threads. It was only helpless in front of Grid.

“Kyaaaak!”

The two armored needles connected by the silver thread roared and inflated its muscles. Then the silver threads shot at Grid again. Exactly 27 threads tangled towards as one, turning into a drill that aimed at Grid’s heart.

‘It’s a really flexible weapon.’

It could be used as a spider web to defend or a drill to attack. The more he looked, the crazier it was. Grid was filled with greed and counterattacked just before the silver thread pierced him.

“Revolve.”

Jjeejeeong!

The timing of using the counterattack was inevitable because Grid’s control abilities improved greatly after going against the top rankers in the National Competition.

Peeok!

The orbit of the silver thread was reversed by Failure and penetrated the head of the fused armored needle.

[The double fused armored needle has been defeated.]

[259,504,141 experience has been acquired.]

[A silver thread has been acquired.]

[Your level has risen.]

[As someone with a second class, you will receive a level up bonus. 12 stat points have been acquired.]

[Six points have been forcibly invested into intelligence due to the influence of the second class, Legendary Great Magician.]

“Sigh...”

Grid checked his health status. During the battle, it was inevitable that he would allow some strikes from the silver thread. But this was largely neutralized by the increased defense and resistance of his items. But it still wasn't an easy battle. In order to defeat six armored needles, Grid summoned Randy, Noe, and the God Hands, and used almost all of his skills. It was a matter of using all his effort.

Thanks to his level up, Grid's stamina was fully recovered. However, his mental state was quite tired. He hoped he could relax while his skill cooldown times came back. He sat down and opened his inventory. It was to check the loot he acquired. There were rotten leather, rotten bones, etc. Nothing was of value except for two silver threads.

[Silver Thread]

Attack Power: 100~????

Durability: 1,000/1,000

Fragments of silver armor that have been shaped in the blood vessels of the armored needles for many years.

Unlike ordinary silver thread that only has a thin coating of silver, this is made of pure silver. It also contains the powerful magic power of the armored needle.

Depending on the skill level of the user, it can be used in various ways due to its different forms.

* It is classified as a secondary weapon.

Conditions of Use: Secondary Weapons Mastery Advanced Level 5. More than 2,000 dexterity.

* The silver thread can be shot quickly if you have more than 2,000 dexterity.

* If you have more than 2,500 dexterity, you can twist 5 or less strands of silver thread together to create the desired shape.

* If you have more than 3,000 dexterity, you can twist 10 or less strands of silver thread together to create the desired shape.

* If you have more than 4,000 dexterity, the speed at which you can control the silver thread is doubled.

* If you have more than 4,000 dexterity, you can twist 20 or less...

...

...

* The silver thread can be used as a material for making items. However, a craftsman level blacksmithing skill is required.

Weight: 5

The minimum damage was very low while the maximum damage seemed to have no limit. A little while ago, he saw the attack of the fused armored needle that twisted together 27 strands of silver thread.

‘Amazing... However, it’s rare for people to learn Secondary Weapons Mastery and the advanced level probably hasn’t appeared yet.’

It was 10 meters long. At this point, it was a secondary weapon that probably only Grid could use.

‘I need to raise my dexterity... ’

Grid grasped the two strands of silver thread with his fingers. Irene would be delighted if he gained more dexterity... Sua approached him as he was seriously thinking.

"Are your wounds okay?"

Grid laughed at her worry.

"As you can see, I'm strong."

The wounds caused by the silver thread were already healing. It was a tremendous recovery speed. Was it due to his high stamina stat? That was just the basics. The reason for Grid's fast recovery speed was the God Hands. To be precise, it was the effect of Goddess Rebecca's Blessing attached to the pavranium. The blessing of Goddess Rebecca increased Grid's health recovery rate by 300%. This was a basic element that made up Grid's strength.

'This man... '

Sua's gaze towards Grid became more favorable. He didn't lose composure despite facing six armored needles and there was also his strong body. He was the blacksmith capable of restoring the Red Phoenix Bow and was virtuous enough to get the title of Pangea's Duke of Virtue.

She couldn't help feeling favorable towards him. Of course, it wasn't a crush, but pure respect. Sua had a type of rational personality.

'Indeed, he's a daoist?'

Daoist. It was a state of a half-god that only those who cultivated daoism could reach. They were known to enjoy eternal life in Shangri-La and had mysterious powers. It was likely that Grid was a daoist.

"Hum hum."

Grid suddenly coughed. His face was red due to the beautiful Sua gazing at him. He looked around the area in a desire to hide it. Sua was convinced when she saw it.

'He isn't a daoist.'

A daoist wouldn't be like this. If Grid was a daoist, then he wouldn't feel embarrassed about the opposite sex. In the first place, Grid's force was overwhelming and beyond mysterious. It was a different existence from a daoist.

'It's different from the yangbans... '

Of course, Grid wasn't a yangban. It was unimaginable to most people, but the yangbans were trash who treated ordinary humans as insignificant beings. If Grid was a yangban, he would've watched as Sua and the Red Phoenix members died.

'In the first place, he wouldn't have wanted the silver thread if he was a yangban.'

This meant that Grid was an ordinary person.

'A regular person... Ah.'

Sua was deep in thought and belatedly realized something. Grid was burdened by her gaze.

"I was rude. I'm sorry."

Grid waved his hand at the bowing Sua.

"There's no need to be sorry. Was the silver thread originally this hard to obtain?"

He killed six armored needles and only got two strands of silver thread. In order to use it directly as a weapon or as a material for items, Grid wanted to secure a large quantity. Sua belatedly noticed the silver thread in Grid's hands and was shocked.

"You got silver thread...!?"

Originally, it was very hard to obtain the silver thread. It was because the moment the armored needles died, the silver thread in their blood vessels would disappear in an instant due to corrosion. In the four years since Han Seokbong organized the dungeon expedition team, only seven silver threads had been obtained.

"You must be really lucky to obtain two silver threads."

Sua was delighted. Grid realized that the drop rate for the silver thread was the worst based on her reaction and stood up.

"What's the size of this dungeon?"

"We haven't been able to measure it. The Red Phoenix group hasn't gone into the depths before."

The Red Phoenix group wasn't as strong as Grid. They went into the dungeon every day, but could only kill two or three armored needles at best.

"Our goal is to go to the end of the dungeon to investigate the cause behind the armored needles and destroy them. But unlike our hearts, we're at a standstill every day."

"..."

"We still have pride. The residents of Pangea can enjoy a happy life because we're able to stop the advance of the armored needles."

Beautiful. Sua was pretty inside and out.

'Although she's a bit of a pervert... '

At that moment.

[A quest has been created.]

[Subjugate the Armored Needles (1)]

Difficulty: S

There are a large number of armored needles in the dungeon beneath Pangea Castle.

Bring peace to Pangea by repelling those who can threaten Pangea at any time.

Quest Clear Conditions: Kill 10 armored needles.

Quest Reward: Affinity with the Red Phoenix group will rise. Five silver thread.

‘The armored needles are strong.’

Grid hadn’t known that a monster hunting quest could be classified with a S-grade difficulty. The armored needles were truly strong. They had over 6 million health and their defense was twice as high as ordinary monsters. In addition, their swordsmanship was excellent, they had the irregularity of the silver thread and also their hot blood as a weapon.

Grid expected that an ordinary level 300 player wouldn’t be able to go one on one with the armored needle. However, Grid was much stronger than the armored needles.

“Okay. Then I’ll clear away as many armored needles as possible.”

He had to gain the compensation of five silver threads. Grid’s motivation was burning as he started to move inside the cave. Then Sua cried out,

"Why are you putting yourself in danger by running forward? Why are you struggling for other people?"

Grid shrugged at her sincere worry.

"I just want the silver thread. And I like you because you’re pretty."

“...Ah?”

Grid spoke bluntly but the result was huge. Sua’s face turned red. She was called the flower of Pangea. A person who wasn’t affected when handsome men whispered sweet words to her was blushing? Grid didn’t know what a big deal it was. Grid was focused on the footsteps of the armored needles that he heard.

‘I’m starting.’

Pahat!

Grid threw the silver thread in the direction that the armored needle was approaching. It was very difficult to shoot the silver thread quickly. However, it was a simple thing for Grid who had over 3,000 dexterity.

Pepeok!

"Kyaaaak!"

The armored needle screamed as it was pierced by the silver thread that Grid threw and sped up its approach. Grid recovered the silver thread and shot it again.

[You have dealt 930 damage to the target.]

[You have dealt 370 damage to the target.]

The damage was terrible. The damage was minimal and in the hundreds, so the armored needle received little damage. But Grid wasn't shaken. Throwing the silver thread didn't consume resources, meaning it wasn't a burden.

'What if I twist them together?'

Sururuk.

Grid moved his hands at a tremendous speed. The two strands of silver thread were joined together, becoming thicker with one pointed end.

'...Isn't he good at this?'

That man, was there anything he couldn't do?

'...Oh, he's good at everything?'

Anything here was omitted.

Peeok!

As Sua's imagination headed in a strange direction, the arrow shaped silver thread shot by Grid dealt over 2,000 damage to the armored needle.

'Now I know.'

Grid was completely satisfied. He became more and more desperate to secure a large

amount of silver thread and swung Failure at the armored needles.

Chapter 542

[You have defeated an armored needle.]

[121,599,800 experience has been acquired.]

[Number of armored needles killed: 2/10]

‘This is delicious hunting.’

The experience given by the armored needle was more than two times higher than that of the true blood vampires. Compared to the junior vampires in the cities, they gave 30 times more experience. Thanks to that, Grid reached level 322 and was rapidly gaining experience.

But it was difficult to recognize Pangea Castle’s dungeon as an ideal hunting ground. It was because the armored needles didn’t often appear.

‘It’s like Sua said.’

Armored needles were monsters who acted on their own. The first encounter with six of them was a special case. The Red Phoenix group were filled with a sense of security at infrequently encountering one armored needle, while Grid felt large regret.

‘It would be good if they constantly respawned two at a time.’

He wanted to acquire a lot of silver thread. Grid felt impatient and anxious. If he combined all his titles, Grid’s dexterity was exactly 3,723. He could control a maximum of 10 silver threads, meaning he wasn’t satisfied with just two. He wanted to maximize his abilities by securing eight more silver threads quickly.

“Hrmm.”

They walked around for 10 minutes and only encountered two armored needles. From the other side of the passage, the sound of slow footsteps was heard again. Grid tried

something new against it. Just as the armored needles restrained Noe and the God Hands, he tied up with armored needles using the two silver threads. The name...

"Needle Binding!"

It was a somewhat familiar name. But this wasn't a playful name. It was a name that Grid came up with after serious thinking.

Hwiririk!

The silver thread rotated and tightly tied up the body of the armored needle. The waist and both arms were firmly tied up. It was a scene that showed how great Grid's dexterity was.

'Okay! I did it properly!'

A smile of satisfaction appeared on Grid's face. But his smile didn't last long.

"Eh?"

"Uwaaaaah!"

The armored needle exerted its strength and the silver thread was released?

'The binding is too weak.'

Two silver threads didn't have enough strength. It wasn't just the armored needles. Most monsters above level 200 would shake off the binding of two silver threads.

'There must be at least 10 strands for binding.'

Grid recalled the silver threads while thinking this and twisted the two strands into one. Then he shot it like an arrow. It took two seconds to control the two strands of silver thread. It meant it would take around 10 seconds to control 10 strands of silver thread. Grid felt the need to raise his dexterity to 4,000 points. If his dexterity reached 4,000, the control rate of the silver threads would double.

What if he could control 10 silver threads in 5 seconds? The strongest system next to the pavranium would be born.

‘The only thing lacking is the throwing speed of the silver threads.’

In the end, the silver thread was still just thread. It was very light. There was a clear limit to the speed at which Grid could throw it. It would be less effective against agile opponents.

‘In order to take advantage of the silver thread as a weapon, it would be better to put a blade at the end. Or I can set up a trap on the battlefield to take advantage of it.’

Dugun dugun!

Grid grew considerably in the process of devising how to use the silver thread. He suddenly realized it. His development potential had grown exponentially since earning the silver thread.

‘If my current self fought against Kraugel at the National Competition, I would’ve 100% won.’

He was sure of it. The problem was that Kraugel was also getting stronger. Kraugel obtained the Sword Saint class that was described as the strongest combat class. Grid wasn’t sure how powerful Kraugel was now after dominating with a normal class.

‘...Ah, I think my pride is hurt.’

He was lagging behind a normal class, despite having a legendary class? At the time, he thought it was natural due to his lack of talent. But now it was very shameful.

‘I need to wash away my mistakes.’

Grid’s motivation shot up. His passion for forging ahead of Kraugel filled his heart.



“Light?”

Grid, Sua, and the Red Phoenix members finally recovered their normal vision when they reached deep inside the dungeon. The walls of the dungeon had the characteristics of sucking in light. Now jade covered the wall, letting out a soft light that illuminated the interior.

“There was a place like this in the dungeon?”

It had already been four years since the Red Phoenix group started the dungeon expedition. But in the meantime, they had never entered so deeply into the dungeon. They always returned after fighting a few armored needles at the entrance. But today was different.

Grid took the lead and killed any armored needles that appeared, allowing those who followed him to enter deeply into the castle’s dungeon. Thanks to him, they were able to find themselves in a beautiful space surrounded by jade. They quickly started searching inside. There was a clear lake and precious herbs were naturally growing.

“The temperature is just right. It’s a place where people can live if they have food.”

"But what about these four passages? Won't we be completely isolated if the armored needles attack us from all four passages?"

“Um... That’s right.”

What was this place? Some of the members who were searching found something immersed in the clear lake.

"What is this? Heok! This!"

“Treasure chest! Treasure chest!”

As with any dungeon, treasure chests often appeared in Pangea Castle’s dungeon. But the probability was extremely low. In the last four years, the Red Phoenix group found no more than 10 treasure chests. Now a treasure chest was situated deep in a clear lake, like it didn’t want to be found. Grid showed great interest in it.

"Will it contain gold?"

It was three hours after entering the castle’s dungeon. Grid laughed brightly at the treasure box despite not being able to hunt a few prey. The Red Phoenix members stopped him as he reached out for the treasure chest.

"It can be dangerous."

"Last year, a colleague opened a treasure chest found in this dungeon and was

poisoned.”

Their words were the truth. There was a 50% chance that a treasure chest in the dungeon would be a trap.

“Then are you just going to leave it without opening it?”

The Red Phoenix members shook their heads at Grid’s words.

“That isn’t it. I’m just afraid that your life will be in danger.”

“Leave it to us. Grid can’t be hurt.”

Grid was clearing the armored needles on behalf of the Red Phoenix members. It was for his own reasons. But as a result, he was a great help to the Red Phoenix members and Pangea. The Red Phoenix wanted to repay the favor to Grid.

Gulp.

The Red Phoenix members pulled out the treasure chest from the lake and gulped. They were concerned about being poisoned or seriously injured when opening the treasure chest. They didn’t want to risk Grid getting hurt.

Clink!

The member’s hands shook and he grimaced. The Red Phoenix member eventually overcame his fear and opened the lid of the treasure chest. No, he tried to open it.

“Huh? It didn’t open?”

“Is this locked?”

The tension of the Red Phoenix group was released for a moment. The solemn atmosphere somewhat brightened.

“Isn’t it rare for locked treasure chests to contain traps?”

“That's right. It’s usually filled with treasures.”

“Ah...! Let’s give this to Grid!”

They wouldn't have made it here without Grid. The ownership of the treasure chest naturally belonged to Grid. The Red Phoenix group politely handed the treasure box to Grid.

"There is a locksmith in Pangea. He can probably unlock this box within a week."

"It will cost quite a bit of money, since certain skills are required."

"Yes."

Grid received the chest and frowned.

[This chest contains special magic. The weight is incredible.]

[Your weight gauge has been exceeded. Movement speed will decrease by 80%.]

"..."

His stamina being reduced to this level meant it was impossible to continue the armored needle quest. Grid still had to hunt three more armored needles, so this treasure chest would just be a burden. But Grid didn't care. He had a universal key!

Clink!

Grid took out a black key and unlocked it at once. It was extremely easy. He just put the key in the lock, twisted it, and it was unlocked. Sua and the Red Phoenix members were shocked at the absurd sight.

'Unlocking a dungeon treasure chest at once?'

'What is this situation?'

'Grid is really proficient... Was he born under a lucky star?'

Sua didn't know why her face was red. It was at that moment.

[The trap box has been opened!]

[Poisonous smoke has covered you!]

[You have suffered 4,883 damage.]

[You have been poisoned!]

[Your head is spinning around!]

[You can't move your lower body!]

[You will lose 4,500 health per second!]

[You have resisted.]

[A mysterious figure appears!]

[A quest has been created...]

...

...

“G-Grid!”

Sua and the Red Phoenix members were startled. It was because the poison emitted from the box was similar to the one that affected their colleague last year. Grid inhaled a lot of it and definitely wouldn't be safe. The Red Phoenix members were surprised by the sudden situation, but Sua responded calmly and promptly.

“Go to Grid and give him an antidote. Then escape from this place with Grid!”

At that moment.

“Who are you?”

Someone's voice was heard.

“Kyaoooooh!”

Armored needles poured in from the four passages. There were eight of them. A middle aged man appeared behind Grid while the group was surrounded. Sua and the Red Phoenix members recognized him instantly. It was impossible not to recognize him.

“Arube!”

In the past, he was the closest aide for Han Seokbong. He was supposedly murdered by the evil daoist priest who attacked Pangea two years ago, only to be hiding deep in the dungeon. He was the master of the armored needles!

“You... You betrayed father.”

Sua was a smart girl. As a matter of fact, she sensed that Arube was behind the invasion two years ago.

Arube smiled slyly. “Indeed, the anger of Pangea’s flower is beautiful. Okay, I will make you into a jiangshi. After death, you will serve me forever.”

“You! How dare you insult the young lady!”

The enraged Red Phoenix members pulled out their weapons and Arube smiled.

Ttang! Ttang!

“It has been seven years since I found the armored needles sleeping here. It was three years faster than Lord Han Seokbong. In the meantime, I have steadily tamed the armored needles, and they are now my faithful servants. You can’t lay one finger on my body. Before you reach me, you will be turned into minced meat by the silver threads.”

“Ugh...”

The Red Phoenix members flinched. They had forgotten about it due to their anger at Arube’s sudden appearance, but Arube had summoned eight armored needles. It was the worst situation.

Ttang! Ttang!

Arube was filled with joy as he watched the frightened Red Phoenix members. He wrapped his arms around his chest as his face flushed.

"Kukuk...! This is so exciting. Now you will know. I have dreamed of this moment since I happened to discover the armored needles seven years ago. The day that I can have Pangea and Sua in my hands!"

"Crazy... Crazy traitor!"

The Red Phoenix members realized that Aruba wasn't sane. They became desperate. They didn't know if Grid dying behind them was okay. They would die here today.

Ttang! Ttang!

"..."

By the way, what was that sound? Why did they keep hearing the sound of hammering? Arube belatedly became aware of it, while Sua and the Red Phoenix members looked behind them. Then they became surprised.

"G-Grid?"

Grid was poisoned when opening the box. The person who was dying was currently squatting in front of an anvil.

"?????"

Question marks appeared over the heads of Sua and the Red Phoenix members.

"Is he crazy?"

Arube discovered Grid and frowned. He was very unhappy about a blacksmith ruining the historic moment.

"Not knowing the current situation and hammering... Are you crazy?"

Grid responded after Arube asked again.

"Yes, I'm not normal."

Ttaang~!

Item Combination.

It had the disadvantage of being hard to use during battle due to the long usage time, but it produced overwhelming results once successful. Grid successfully combined the +9 Failure and +8 Grid's Greatsword before commanding the God Hands.

"Item Transformation. Failure."

Kiiing.

The four golden hands turned into golden shark-like greatswords. Soon after.

Kwa kwa kwa kwang!

Since it was reproduced by pavranium, the four golden Failures exceeded the power of the original and pierced the bodies of the armored needles. The blood of the armored needles scattered in all directions, threatening Sua and the Red Phoenix members.

"Linked Kill Wave."

Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!

There was a storm of energy that overtook Arube.

"Uh... Huh?"

Arube couldn't recognize the situation properly and reflexively shrunk back. Grid faced him and expressed thanks.

"Thanks for the new quest."

Grid felt confident as soon as he learned about the contents of the SS grade quest.

Chapter 543

[Location of the Red Phoenix Bow]

Difficulty Level: SS

Arube, known to be murdered by the evil daoist priest, was actually alive.

Arube is part of the group of a master daoist priests.

The monsters were invited by the master priest, and now Pangea is isolated.

Arube is now planning to occupy Pangea with his fully controlled army of armored needles.

Find the whereabouts of the Red Phoenix Bow that was stolen by Arube and the evil daoist priest!

Arube has a strong desire to survive and will give you a lot of information!

Quest Clear Conditions: The capture or death of Arube.

Quest Clear Rewards:

1. Succeed in capturing Arube - Your character experience will increase by 30% and the quest 'Location of the Red Phoenix Bow' will link to the next part.
2. Arube's death - Your character will gain two levels and the quest 'Location of the Red Phoenix Bow' will disappear.

'Amazing...'

Shortly after being poisoned. Grid was thrilled when he checked the new quest. The story of Arube and the daoist priest was found because he met Idan and completed the 'Find the Traces of the Great Hero!' quest. He was able to enter the dungeon

because he had a relationship with White and won the blacksmithing competition. Then there was a trap box unexpectedly found in the dungeon.

The 'Location of the Red Phoenix Bow' quest was created the moment Grid's actions came to a conclusion. It was presumed that if he completed the linked quest, he could acquire the original Red Phoenix Bow. The original Red Phoenix Bow? 'Of course' it was the strongest bow at present.

It was said that Grid's Red Phoenix Bow (Reproduction) was beyond the original, but the work had inherent limitations. The limits of a reproduction? The maximum rating was legendary. On the other hand, the original Red Phoenix Bow had at least a minimum rating of legendary and it could presumably go beyond that. It was inevitable that the reproduction of the Red Phoenix Bow was weaker than the original. This was the absolute system of the game.

What if unlike Grid's expectations, the original was weaker than the reproduction? It didn't undermine the value of the original. It was because the original had the Red Phoenix Breath.

[Red Phoenix's Breath]

A blessing of the Red Phoenix.

It will increase fire resistance by 30%.

It can be used to infuse items with the powerful aura of the Red Phoenix.

However, it can be attached to items with a strong fire attribute.

Weight: 2

It was the reward Grid earned in exchange for restoring the Red Phoenix Bow. If he obtained this one, he would have two. Grid's fire resistance would be 60% just having it and if he used it as an item making material, he could double the power of the Red Phoenix Bow. He knew how strong the Red Phoenix Bow was. It wasn't easy to judge unless someone experienced it themselves.

“Kuk...! Kukuk!”

The pleased Grid was quick to act. Arube appeared with the armored needles and made fun of Sua and the Red Phoenix members.

“Item Combination.”

Ttang! Ttang! Ttang!

Grid took out the portable furnace and started work with the God Hands. Fire was instantly produced using the white phosphorus wood. Then he laid Failure and Grid’s Greatsword side by side on the anvil, hitting them with a hammer. The four Mjolnirs increased the speed of blacksmithing skills, boosting the speed of Item Combination. At the end of this work.

“Is he crazy? Not knowing the current situation and hammering... Are you crazy?”

Arube belatedly noticed Grid and cursed.

“Linked Kill Wave.”

Grid swung Failure + Grid’s Greatsword.

Kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa kwa!

A named NPC was strong. In particular, Arube was able to control the armored needles. Grid judged that he would be stronger than the armored needles. Grid carefully calculated as the storm of energy covered Arube.

‘Controlling the undead means he must have a necromancer type class. Even if he’s a named NPC, he can’t help having low defense and health. Considering the possibility of 3 Joint Attacks activating or a critical attack, I will take control of the match by using Transcended Link after Linked Kill Wave.’

If he linked it with Pinnacle Kill then there was a chance that Arube could die. Failure boasted the strongest attack power. Grid’s Greatsword added 20% more skill damage, despite its attack power being less than Failure. The power demonstrated when these two greatswords combined together was terrible.

Grid needed to control himself.

“Uh... Uwaaaack!”

Pepepepeok!

Grid smiled as Arube screamed after being hit by Linked Kill Wave.

‘I will soon clear the SS grade quest.’

It was really good! Grid used Transcended Link and immediately attacked Arube again. Suddenly, he stiffened like a stone statue.

“...Eh?”

Arube’s health gauge...

“It’s gone?”

Yes, gone.

During his freshman days in university. His boiler was turned off because Grid used his living expenses on the gaming fee.

‘Why?’

He might be a necromancer, but how could he have such low defense and health? Grid was confused.

“Uhhh...”

[Arube has died.]

Arube’s health was depleted by Linked Kill Wave and turned to grey. Then notification windows appeared in front of Grid.

[Necromancer Arube has been defeated.]

[89,005,310 experience has been acquired.]

[You have obtained an unknown mark.]

[Arube's Ring has been acquired.]

[The question 'Location of the Red Phoenix Bow' has been terminated. The linked quests will be destroyed.]

[Your have gained two levels from the quest reward.]

[As someone with a second class, you will receive a level up bonus. 24 stat points have been acquired.]

[12 points have been forcibly invested into intelligence due to the influence of the second class, Legendary Great Magician.]

"...Ah!"

Flop!

Grid sighed and sat down. The Red Phoenix Breath that dwelled in the original Red Phoenix Bow. He lost the only clue to tell him the whereabouts of the precious treasure, causing his mental state to be bruised. The Red Phoenix members approached the grumbling Grid.

"You punished the villain that threatened the young lady and Pangea! You are the hero and savior of Pangea!"

"Grid! Please tell us if you experience any trouble in the future! I will be willing to experience any inconvenience if it's for you!"

"..."

The affinity with the Red Phoenix members had risen a lot. But Grid wasn't pleased at all. He blankly questioned Sua.

“Necromancer? Do they have inherently weak bodies and stamina?”

"That's right. They're as weak as a child. But they usually don't allow hits, because they can summon things several times stronger than them."

“...I see.”

"Pangea's Duke of Virtue precisely dug at Arube's gaps. Arube didn't think a blacksmith would attack and couldn't cope with it."

“...Um.”

Grid shook off his gloomy mood. He didn't get the best result for the unexpected quest, but he couldn't be frustrated forever.

‘Think positively.’

He gained two levels in exchange for defeating Arube. In addition, he obtained the Unknown Mark and Arube's Ring. These were rewards he wouldn't have obtained if he captured Arube.

‘Anyway, this is the reward for an SS grade quest. It's possible that these have great value.’

Maybe their value was better than the original Red Phoenix Bow. Of course, this was just a maybe. Grid was filled with hope and was about to use the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal skill to confirm the information of the Unknown Mark and Arube's Ring.

Pepepepeng!

However, the battle between the God Hands transformed into Failure and armored needle was deepening. In the beginning, the God Hands overwhelmed the armored needles with their power. But they started to be suppressed one by one with the silver thread. Now the armored needles were aiming for Grid and the Red Phoenix members.

"First, I need to take care of these guys."

Grid stopped the appraisal and stared at the armored needles with a fearsome expression. He had targets to vent his anger on.

‘I will wipe these guys out before leaving the dungeon.’

It was also time to go eat at Idan’s restaurant. Grid wanted to be strong, but his spirit was very pained from eating Idan’s food. It was painful and hard. Grid was burning with motivation for various reasons. Sua’s white face flushed as she gazed at him.

"Wow... You never get tired."

"...?"

Why was Sua’s face suddenly red? Grid didn’t want to know. No, he was afraid to know. It was because he sensed he would be corrupted as soon as he understood her mind.



Immediately after taking over the fortified city of Patrian and obtaining Earl Ashur. The Eternal Kingdom named Grid a traitor. Grid was stripped of all authority and status in the kingdom and his territories would be reclaimed.

The first target was naturally Cork Island. It was the judgment of the Eternal Kingdom that Cork wouldn’t be as hard to reclaim since it was separate from Reidan, Patrian, and Borneo. But what was this? Two naval divisions had already failed to occupy Cork Island.

Admiral Lebuck was going crazy after receiving the report.

"The distance between Reidan and Cork Island is at least 15 days apart and there are fortresses from our kingdom all along the road. It’s impossible for the rebels to support Cork Island. Then how is Cork Island protecting itself from our offensive?"

"There is a lot of food due to the abundant land, and the rebels have arranged elite troops. It’s an island, so they know that we’ll move the navy."

It was plausible. Lebuck made a decision.

"We need to change the manner of attack."

Tak.

Lebuck pointed to the north of Cork Island on the map. Cork Island was originally a

territory of the Eternal Kingdom. Lebuck was completely aware of the geography of the island.

"Once the sun goes down, send the diving rats to this place."

Diving rats. The official unit name was R77. They were the special unit of the Eternal Kingdom's navy. Tonight, they would dive into the sea, enter the outskirts of Cork Island, move through the secret tunnels in the mines, and infiltrate Cork Castle.

"Then cut off the head of the rebel leader. At that time, our fleet will strike at the island."

It had been a few years since the rebels ruled Cork Island. It was unlikely that the rebels would know about the secret tunnels that existed in the Cork Island mines.

"Tomorrow, Cork Island will return to the Eternal Kingdom."

It was a winning strategy that could be developed due to knowing the geography of Cork Island. Lebuck was overflowing with confidence.

Chapter 544

There were surprisingly many players who chose the soldier class. They could receive a stable income and quests from the military, as well as learn new skills according to their rank. Few classes could learn as many skills as soldiers. Of course, this didn't mean it was the best. There were a lot more disadvantages.

An example was that they had limited freedom. They needed to enter the game at certain times to attend military training. Quests given from superiors had to be unconditionally performed. They had to follow the principles of command and free travel was also impossible.

Therefore, there was a question. Why choose a soldier when playing the game? Was it fun to live a controlled life? How could it be fun? The majority of people saw the soldier class negatively. But some people had different thoughts. There were some people who appreciated the merits of the soldier class.

Most of them were ambitious. It was possible for a soldier to be promoted according to their ability, and they were a class with the possibility to gain a lot of power. The players who chose the soldier class would play a controlled game, but they were patient enough to develop.

In this place.

There was a player in the R77 unit of the Eternal Kingdom's navy. His ID was Soldier. It was a name that spoke of his desire to be a soldier. In reality, he was a soldier of the US army and enjoyed it. He liked the strict rules and control, a type of person who took pleasure from legal killings.

'Grid... Is there any figure more suitable for my promotion?'

Grid became a hero through the golem invasion of Reinhardt. A wonderful politician who revived the deserted ghost town of Reidan. A resourceful person who swallowed up the Tzedakah Guild and Silver Knights Guild. A gifted man who used the media to disturb people around the world and seize Patrian. The only legendary item maker.

Looking at Grid's history, including the National Competition, Soldier couldn't help

admiring him. A perfect person. He wasn't a legend for nothing.

Soldier was excited. His achievements would become more noticeable if he defeated a perfect being.

'Grid's rebellion is a great chance for me. I could be promoted a few times in this war.'

He could be promoted to commander in one step.

'First, take care of today. I must contribute to the occupation of Cork Island.'

Splash!

Splash splash!

Deep in the night. The 30 members of R77 jumped from the ship. They dived deep into the sea and avoided the enemy's surveillance network. They were armed with the third-generation magic wetsuits developed by the navy magicians and were getting enough oxygen through that.

Soldier used the Advanced Swimming Mastery Lv. 2 that he thoroughly trained in after being in the navy. His eyes were determined as he dreamt about becoming a war hero.



Cork Island was a place that contained the memories of the Silver Knight Guild. Its actual economic value was the highest among the territories possessed by Overgeared. There were dozens of mines and it was famous as a sightseeing place. As the former master of the Silver Knights Guild, Peak Sword wanted to protect Cork Island. He didn't want to hand it over to the enemy.

Of course, in reality, it was impossible to stand up to the aggression of the Eternal Kingdom. Cork Island was isolated. He couldn't expect to keep it. The number of soldiers was limited to 1,000 and the average level was 150. There were no named knights. It was a territory that couldn't be kept even if Grid was present.

Lauel said it was wiser to give up Cork Island. However, the will of Peak Sword wasn't broken.

"I'm a Korean who inherited the spirit of General Yi Soonshin. I will never give up."

One month. He needed to keep it for just one month. He would tie up the enemy troops as long as possible and collect more taxes from Cork Island for Overgeared. Peak Sword fought with all his might for the past five days. He actively utilized the coastal fortifications that Cork Island's lord had built and sank several ships of the Eternal Navy.

It was thanks to the efforts of the 10 elites from the Silver Knights guild and the soldiers of Cork Island, but Peak Sword's maritime capabilities were also spectacular. In the past, he had a long battle with the Sakura Guild over Cork Island and grew into an excellent naval commander.

"Brother, aren't you overdoing it?"

An Changsal, the second in command of the Silver Knights Guild, was worried about Peak Sword. He was worried since Peak Sword kept fighting while using buff potions.

"Isn't it really hard to earn money? You don't be able to get married if you had no money. What's the point of drinking potions if you're a bachelor for the rest of your life?"

The smart Lauel had warned Peak Sword. It would be difficult to keep Cork Island for more than a week. He refused to believe it at first. However, after experiencing the war directly, Lauel was right. It was impossible to withstand the navy's offensive for more than a week with just An Changsal and the elites of the Silver Knights Guild. The difference in power was too great and there was a limit to their stamina.

"There's also a minimum of breaks and the soldiers are already exhausted. It isn't a bad idea to keep the island, but there's no point if the damage is too big..."

"This isn't useless damage."

Peak Sword cut off An Changsal's words.

"This is for Overgeared."

Peak Sword thought it was worth it if he could reduce the burden on Overgeared by sacrificing himself. He had a duty to do his best in order to repay Grid and Lauel. That's why he would bring out his pickaxe today.

Deep in the night. Peak Sword judged it was impossible for the enemy's fleet to attack

in the darkness and rose from his spot.

"I will go to the mines."

"Oh my..." An Changsal clicked his tongue. "Why do you swing the pickaxe every night? You should take a rest when possible."

"There are no good hunting grounds. Rather than raising my level, I need to raise my stamina and persistence. God Grid would've done it. Do you know God Grid?"

Repetitive labor led to a small but steady increase in stats. In particular, Peak Sword liked the feeling of mining. It was pleasurable when minerals emerged when he hit the wall with a pickaxe.

"Everyone else should rest. I'm going."

Peak Sword left his colleagues alone and headed for the mine. It was the mine closest to the coast. The mining rate was low compared to other mines on Cork Island. However, Peak Sword had no choice but to use it. The other mines were too far away from the fortress.

'It's comforting that there's a mine in a position where I can respond immediately to the enemy's invasion.'

Ttang! Ttang!

The dark mine. Peak Sword lit a few torches and started swinging his pickaxe. He hit the solid wall and collected minerals. He wasn't in a hurry. In the first place, the minerals weren't the goal. He needed to raise his stamina. Labor was the only way to increase his stats.

[Your persistence has increased by 1.]

[Your stamina has increased by 1.]

[The Intermediate Mining skill has increased to Lv. 3.]

“Kuk...! Good!”

How fun was this?

Kaaang! Kaaang!

A smile appeared on Peak Sword’s face as he kept mining.

Teong!

Teeeeeong!

“...?”

The deepest part of the mine. A faint noise was heard from the end of a tunnel. Peak Sword tilted his head to one side.

“What?”

It was fundamentally different from the sound of wind. There was a sense of weight to it and above all, the sound came from behind the wall.

“...Perhaps?”

Peak Sword’s eyes shone brightly.

“Is there a secret dungeon?”

If so, this was a big jackpot. He would receive a great reward in return for finding a new dungeon. He could also use the monsters to deal a big blow to the enemy.

‘This is a dungeon located near the battlefield. If I act properly, the mobs can be used against the enemy.’

It was presumed that they wouldn’t do that much, but it was enough to have expectations.

Gulp!

Peak Sword was filled with anticipation and tension. He gripped the pickaxe and

pointed it at the completely blocked wall.

‘A hidden place would have great value.’

Peak Sword eagerly wanted to see it! He tightened his grip on the pickaxe. Then he took the familiar stance of drawing a sword. It was to enjoy the class bonus effect when using a weapon or tool from the drawing attention. In addition, it was to imitate Piaro, who combined farming and swordsmanship.

“Draw Sword.”

Surung!

The pickaxe that Grid made. It had a different durability and attack power from normal pickaxes and could be used as a weapon.

"Fang."

Paaaat!

It was like a ray of light was shot from Peak Sword's fingertips.

Kurururung!

The wall that was Peak Sword's target suddenly fell down by itself? And...

“Eh?”

From behind the collapsed wall, a strange man appeared. The ID was Soldier. It was a player like Peak Sword.

"?????"

"?????"

A moment of time. Peak Sword and Soldier's eyes met and the same question appeared in their minds.

‘Who?’

It was only a short amount of time. Peak Sword and Soldier understood the current situation but Peak Sword's pickaxe hit Soldier first.

Puok!

"Kuk... Keeoook!"

What the hell was this? A miner with coal covered his face. Why was a person mining in this critical wartime situation and why was he mining in front of the secret tunnel?

"D... Dammit."

A person who was going to become a powerful figure in the Eternal Kingdom's army was going to die here?

Stagger.

Soldier's confusion was maximized as he stumbled. Blood flowed from his forehead where the pickaxe hit and he slowly turned to grey. Drawing the sword. It took a long time to activate and recover, but the attack power alone was worthy of being among the top.

This wasn't an ordinary pickaxe, and the power of the skill cast through Grid's pickaxe was incredibly strong. It was enough to knock out the level 250 Soldier, who was within the top 10,000 rankings. Peak Sword's overwhelming presence gave the opponent a sense of resistance.

"You... What are you?"

The R77 squad members were confused when their colleague was murdered in front of their eyes. Peak Sword grasped the situation late and replied.

"Swo... No, a miner. An ordinary miner of Cork Island."

"What?"

Coincidences might've overlapped, but their ace soldier had died in a single blow. The R77 members knew that the miner in front of them was less likely to be an ordinary miner. However, it was hard to deny that he was a miner.

Clink!

On the other hand, Peak Sword recovered the bloody pickaxe and took an attack posture again. Of course, this time he used a sword instead of a pickaxe. The R77 members shouted when they saw him place a hand on the sheath.

“This isn’t a joke!”

It was already too late. The R77 troop members. They gave time to Peak Sword.

“Annihilate.”

Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa! Ku kwa kwa kwa kwa!

The R77 unit under the command of the Navy. The greatest elite troops who built up a lot of fighting abilities in all types of wars were now wiped out. It was a rare event that would make the navy rush around frantically.

Chapter 545

[Grid's Pickaxe]

Rating: Unique

Durability: 117/180 Attack Power: 233

* 20% increase in mining speed.

* 10% increase in attack power.

* Shape conversion is possible.

A tool with long blades extending on both sides.

A pickaxe made by the legendary blacksmith Grid.

At first glance, it is no different from a normal pickaxe. But there are obvious differences.

The blades on both sides can be folded as needed and half the hilt is made of a blade.

It can be used as a sword.

However, since it is far from the ideal sword form, it isn't recommended to be used with bad skills.

Conditions of Use: Mining or Farming skill. Advanced Mastery Level 1. 1,200 strength.

Weight: 880

In fact, Peak Sword hadn't understood it when he received this pickaxe. Shouldn't a tool be faithful to its original role? Why did Grid make the pickaxe a weapon? Wouldn't it be better to have a separate blade instead of a pickaxe? Peak Sword wondered what

this was about. It was still an unknown world.

Due to the peculiar form of the pickaxe, Peak Sword was able to use his style of swordsmanship and eventually destroyed the forces who secretly infiltrated Cork Island. He took the momentum and destroyed the R77 troops.

[Your level has risen.]

[You have neutralized the Eternal Navy's covert operation.]

[A signal flare has been found on the dead enemy's body. It can be used to disturb the enemy.]

"God Grid... You're the best."

Grid made the pickaxe a weapon because he foresaw what would happen today. Peak Sword was thrilled by Grid's foresight and respected him even more. The real reason why Grid made the pickaxe a weapon? It was purely for Piaro, but Peak Sword interpreted it this way.



Skin that was golden from the sunlight. Red hair that was intense as blazing flames and lustrous lips. She was the best beauty of South America, Jishuka. She stood on the high walls of Patrian and looked down at the battlefield.

"The players' participation rate is increasing every day."

The Eternal Kingdom had named Grid and the Overgeared members as traitors. The players in the Eternal Kingdom received a tsunami of quests.

Defeat Grid. Defeat Overgeared. Occupy Bairan. Occupy Reidan. Occupy Patrian. Capture Grid's family, etc.

The quests that threatened Grid and the Overgeared members promised huge rewards for the players. The players naturally wouldn't refuse the quest. They coveted

their rewards, and it was their natural obligation as people of the Eternal Kingdom to suppress the rebellion.

That's right. The players were immersed. Life as a citizen of Eternal. They weren't just playing games, they existed as heroes of 'another world.' An overwhelming sense of immersion. This was the true attraction of a virtual reality game.

"Why?"

Jishuka swallowed her saliva. There were too many enemies. In fact, the 10,000 soldiers of the Eternal Kingdom wasn't a big problem. Their average level was 160. They couldn't be a threat to the elites of the Overgeared members. But the players were a problem. There were thousands of players, including high level rankers. The large variety of classes was diverse and the risk factors were huge.

Jishuka laughed at the nervous Toban.

"What are you doing?"

Kkirik!

Jishuka drew her bow and aimed at the army.

Hwaruruk!

Flames sparked at the end of the arrow.

"Sweep them all away. Should we show any mercy to dogs who dare to bare their teeth at us?"

"...No, what?"

In this situation, why wasn't this woman scared? Toban was surprised when he saw that Jishuka didn't shrink back.

Kuwaaaaaang!

The fire arrows crossed the battlefield and struck the middle of the enemies, causing a powerful explosion. Dozens of people died in an instant. The players of the Eternal Kingdom turned white.

"Red flames archer... It's true that they're fraudulent when it comes to sieges."

"How can we break that arrow bombardment?"

In just a few seconds. The fire arrows shot by Jishuka consecutively flew through the sky. The battlefield became a sea of fire. It was truly huge firepower. It was a power optimized for mass destruction. Both the Eternal Kingdom and Overgeared members were amazed by Jishuka's power, but Jishuka herself felt regretful.

'I can't display my power with this bow.'

It was a bow she commissioned from Grid. She hadn't been able to replace it, despite being 22 levels beyond it. It was because there was no good alternative. From the standpoint of Jishuka, this bow had a lower limit than her level and wasn't satisfactory.



'Marquis Steim is more cautious than necessary.'

Reidan.

Lael had a headache. What was the biggest reason for occupying Patrian? It was to connect Reidan to the north and gain Marquis Steim's support. But unexpectedly, Marquis Steim was just watching the situation. He wouldn't side with Grid if it was unlikely Grid would become the king.

'He isn't nervous, despite Irene being in Reidan.'

Marquis Steim loved his daughter. In addition, Irene was Marquis Steim's only heir and Grid was Irene's husband. Lael expected that Marquis Steim would naturally take Grid's side in this war. Grid becoming king would make his daughter a queen and his grandchild a prince.

But Marquis Steim was a more cautious person than Lael expected. He knew how to distinguish between business and personal matters and didn't cling to his bloodline. If he made the wrong choice, the millions of people in the north would be affected. It was obvious that Marquis Steim was worried about their safety and aiming for a more certain choice.

"Well... I don't blame him."

Lael understood and respected Marquis Steim's choice. It was good to see a noble that cared for the people. Still, he couldn't help feeling frustrated.

'I appreciate the fact that your political accomplishments that have revived the north. But your ankle is caught by the people and you can't be used as a tool.'

He wasn't a person who could be assigned to a key position when the kingdom was founded later. Lael decided and opened the list of rankers. It was a habit. In his view, it should be the default to monitor the level of the high rankers.

"...Eh?"

Lael was looking at the list of rankings to determine the level of the forces that could potentially be hostile to Grid. He doubted his eyes. Grid had been level 322 just three hours ago and he was now 324.

"W-What?"

Grid's level had been rising rapidly in the East Continent. He was about to enter 15th place on the unified rankings. But no matter how fast he was, gaining two levels in just three hours?

"9th rank on the list? Grid, what the hell are you doing?"

He wondered if Grid was bugged. Lael laughed as he anticipated the reaction of the media, only to suddenly feel anxious.

'Maybe he'll come back to the West Continent much sooner than expected?'

Would Grid return before the project to make Grid a king be complete?



"..."

In the darkness. Faker breathed as he watched Irene and Lord. He focused on protecting them from any threats. But Faker soon came to realize something. There was no need for his protection.

'Potato?'

Irene was reading a book with Lord in her arms. On the wall above where she was sitting, a worker bringing potatoes to the soldiers accidentally dropped one potato. It was the famous rainbow potato. The potato fell quickly towards Irene's head and Faker prepared to move.

"Ahat."

Lord, laughing in Irene's arms, suddenly pulled out a dagger and threw it towards the sky. It was so fast and stealthy that Irene didn't even realize Lord had thrown it.

Peeok!

Faker made a bemused expression as the potato hit by Lord's dagger split in half.

'My protection... It isn't necessary.'

It wasn't just due to Lord's excellent abilities. There were 200 girls in the vicinity of Irene and Lord. Faker realized that they had also taken out their weapons to protect Irene from the potato. There was also Kasim, king of shadows, hidden in Lord's shadow.

"...Both of them will be safe in Reidan."

Faker had nothing to do. He wondered if there was anything more pointless than protecting the safest people in the world.



[You have succeeded in killing 10 armored needles.]

[The quest 'Subjugate the Armored Needles (1)' has been cleared.]

[Affinity with the Red Phoenix group has risen and 5 silver threads have been acquired.]

[Affinity with the Red Phoenix has risen to the peak.]

[The quest 'Subjugate the Armored Needles (2)' has been created.]

[Subjugate the Armored Needles (2)]

Difficulty: S

There are a large number of armored needles in the dungeon beneath Pangea Castle.

Bring peace to Pangea by repelling those who can threaten Pangea at any time.

Quest Clear Conditions: Kill 20 armored needles.

Quest Clear Reward: 5 silver thread.

He had only obtained two silver threads from defeating 10 armored needles. The drop rate for the silver thread was the worst. Grid judged that the most realistic way to acquire the silver thread was to complete the quests.

'But giving out five threads for killing 20... '

The appearance rate of the armored needles was too low. It would take a long time if he wanted to hunt 20.

'It might take two days if I'm unlucky.'

Grid sighed and left the dungeon with the Red Phoenix group.

"Ohh! Pangea's Duke of Virtue! You're safe!"

"Grid!"

In front of the well. Half a day had passed since Grid entered the dungeon but White and Han Seokbong were still waiting. They were quite worried about Grid. Sua explained the whole story. She spoke about how Grid defeated the armored needles with overwhelming strength and condemned Arube.

The liking in Han Seokbong's gaze towards Grid increased.

"You really went through a lot of trouble, Pangea's Duke of Virtue. You were a big help. Now, you must be exhausted and hungry. I have prepared delicacies that can only be enjoyed in Pangea for Pangea's Duke of Virtue."

[Lord Han Seokbong is feeling more favorable towards you.]

[There is a place for you to stay in Pangea Castle. It is a place with hot springs for stamina recovery.]

[All facilities of Pangea Castle are available free of charge and you will be served a meal whenever you want.]

"Delicacies..."

Grid gulped because he was starved. The thought of delicious food stimulated his appetite. But Grid was always rewarded for his effort and patience. He barely suppressed his appetite.

"The meal... I will eat outside."

He had to go to Idan's restaurant. It was important to secure stats, even if he experienced food poisoning. Grid swallowed his tears and left the castle. He walked with unmotivated footsteps and pulled out the Unknown Mark and Arube's Ring.

'I shouldn't expect much... Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal.'

It was time to acknowledge that most of Grid's predictions always went the opposite way.

Chapter 546

Capture or kill Arube?

If 100 players were given the 'Location of the Red Phoenix Bow' quest, 100 out of 100 would've chosen to capture Arube. It was natural. Capturing Arube would allow them to win the Red Phoenix Bow. Wasn't it strongest battle gear? People wouldn't be foolish enough to kill Arube just for a rise in level.

'...I'm a stupid jerk.'

How many of the two billion users would think that being too strong could be a sin? Grid accidentally killed Arube. He got two levels and Arube's items in exchange, but he couldn't help feeling depressed.

"Hah."

Grid's shoulders were slumped as he used the Legendary Blacksmith's Appraisal on the Unknown Mark and Arube's Ring. Grid didn't have high expectations. These were items that wouldn't have been revealed to the world unless Arube was killed. In other words, it was unlikely that the items would be too good.

"Still, he was a named NPC so it wouldn't be garbage... Eh?"

Grid's footsteps stopped as he checked the item details. He was so surprised by the outcome that his body stiffened like a stone statue.

[The blacksmith who became a legend can appraise items with an excellent discerning eye. If a hidden feature exists in the target item, it will be found.]

[Unknown Mark]

A black sun mark.

The usage is unknown.

[You have discovered a hidden feature in the item!]

[Mark of Evolution]

Rating: Unique

A functional marker developed by the alchemy facility.

If this mark is attached to your body, one of your strength, agility, stamina, or intelligence stats will increase by 200.

User Restriction: Level 200 or higher.

Weight: 0

“Wow.”

Grid’s mouth dropped open at the unexpected situation. An item that raised his stats when stuck to his body? It was also by 200 points!

“Amazing!”

The item wasn’t trash. It actually had tremendous value. Grid was thrilled. But the biggest reason for Grid’s pleasure wasn’t the value of the mark. It was the glimpse of the possibilities of alchemy. Grid was truly excited by this point.

‘Is it possible to someday produce these marks at Reidan’s alchemy facility? Rabbit, please prove that your choice isn’t wrong.’

Grid prayed earnestly for Rabbit and examined Arube’s Ring. Then he sighed.

[Arube’s Ring]

Rating: Unique

A ring completed after many experiments by Arube, who wanted to use the abilities of the armored needles.

When worn, five or less strands of silver thread can be twisted together to the desired shape.

Conditions of Use: None.

Weight: 4

“ ... ”

According to the item description of the silver thread, at least 2,500 dexterity was needed to handle five or less silver threads. That's right. In other words, Arube's Ring was an item that increased the wearer's dexterity to 2,500. It was useless for Grid, whose dexterity had already reached 3,700.

"Sigh, giving me this..."

Grid was grumbling while thinking about it. What if an ordinary player got Arube's Ring? By now, they would be jumping with joy. In the first place, Grid was the only one qualified to handle the silver thread freely. From a general point of view, the two items obtained from killing Arube didn't fall significantly compared to the Red Phoenix Bow. It was just Grid who didn't feel all the benefits.

"...No, wait. I think I can use it."

Grid suddenly thought of the Overgeared Skeletons. Skeletons that could wear equipment items, unlike normal skeletons. What would happen if they wore Arube's Ring.

'Won't they support me properly in battle?'

The use of the silver thread was endless. It would be a great help for Grid if the Overgeared Skeletons could use the silver thread to tie up the feet of the enemy for a while. There was no definite limit on the random damage of the silver thread. The level 1 Overgeared Skeletons wielding the silver thread might deal a blow to level 100 monsters.

The minimum damage was only 100 and this could appear 999 out of 1,000 times. In any case, his expectations for the Overgeared Skeletons rose significantly.

“Kukuk...”

Grid couldn't control the laugh that emerged. He felt so happy that he could fly away. He took advantage of the momentum and took out the Mark of Evolution. It was to increase his stats. He wanted either the intelligence or agility stat. Agility needed to be increased to match the ratio of strength and intelligence allowed Grid to learn more magic from Braham.

‘Stamina also isn't bad. An increase in health and defense means my survival ability will increase greatly. The usage of Blackening will also increase.’

It just couldn't be strength. His strength was already overflowing.

‘The probability of gaining the desired stat is 75%.’

There was only a 25% chance of being unlucky. Grid believed in the concept of probability as he placed the back sun mark on the back of his hand.

Chiiiiik!

“Um.”

There was a stinging feeling. Grid frowned, but didn't lose his smile. Agility, stamina, and intelligence.

‘Which of the three stats will go up?’

[The Mark of Evolution has been placed.]

[Strength has risen by 200.]

“...Shit.”

The smile completely disappeared from the face of the frustrated Grid. No, dammit. There was a 75% chance of getting his desired stats and a 25% chance of getting unwanted stats, then what was this?

"Why is it the 25%?"

Grid was certain that the devil had made the idea of probability.

"Ah... Is this irreversible?"

Strength was the best stat for physical damage dealers. Not only did it increase physical attack power, it also gave a small amount of health. But Grid knew that he would be stronger if he adjusted his strength and agility to a ratio of 1:1. He didn't want to widen the gap between strength and agility.

"Ugh... It would be much better if intelligence rose."

Was there any blacksmith in the world who wanted to raise intelligence? It was sad. Grid became restless and closed his eyes. Then he looked at the information of the mark on the back of his hand. It was to check if he could reapply it.

[Mark of Evolution]

Status: Strength.

200 strength is added.

You can try changing the stat.

However, changing the stats will cause one of your stats to permanently drop by 5.

"..."

One of his stats would drop by 5 points. It was a truly fearsome penalty. This was half the value of an elixir, a number that could be gained by eating at least five of Idan's dishes. Eating Idan's food didn't always raise his stats.

‘Why?’

Grid grimaced while sweat flowed down his back. Should he be satisfied with the increase in attack strength, despite the inefficiency? Or should he lost five stat points for a more dramatic increase in attack power? His worries didn’t last long.

‘Anything would be good apart from strength. It’s worth it.’

The odds were 75%. Furthermore, Grid had a lot of different types of stats. There was strength, stamina, intelligence, agility, persistence, composure, indomitable, dignity, insight, courage, charm demonic power, good luck, etc. It was a variety of stats that other people couldn’t dream of. It would be profitable if he could get 200 stats he wanted in exchange for losing 5 stats.

‘In particular, it will be a great hit if I lose the points from composure or demonic power.’

Composure reduced the probability of entering an abnormal state and the recovery speed from it. Basically, it wasn’t a very useful stat for Grid, who was immune to status conditions. In addition, Grid was frightened about what would happen when demonic power became too high.

Grid prayed earnestly. He hoped to gain agility or intelligence in exchange for sacrificing one of these two stats!

“Change mark.”

[The location of the mark can be reset.]

Pahat!

The mark of the black sun on Grid’s hand rose into the air again. Perhaps if Grid was a person who cared about appearance, he would’ve attached it to his chest or neck. But Grid wasn’t interested in appearance.

‘Isn’t there a higher chance of increasing intelligence if I stick it to my head?’

Grid thought up this logic and placed the mark in the center of his forehead. At the same time.

[The Mark of Evolution is being reconfigured.]

[5 good luck stats have disappeared.]

[Strength has risen by 200.]

“XX.”

He lost his good luck stats that he cherished the most and his strength stat rose again? Grid lost his reason and immediately rearranged the mark again. He pulled the mark off his forehead and slapped it onto his chest. It was just below the collarbone. The dark sun mark seen through the wide collar looked nice.

[The Mark of Evolution is being reconfigured.]

[5 good luck stats have disappeared.]

[Stamina has risen by 200.]

“...”

At level 300, every point in stamina increased health by 25 and defense by 0.9. The 200 rise in stamina gave Grid an extra 5,000 health and good defense, so it certainly wasn't bad. Still, it was less dramatic than the agility stat that increased his combat ability, or the intelligence stat that helped him learn new magic.

Grid was a little sad, but what could he do?

“Let's just be satisfied with this...”

He was too afraid to do it anymore. Grid moved like a beaten man after he lost 10 points in good luck. He arrived in front of Idan's restaurant.



"You came!"

As usual, the restaurant was empty.

Idan welcomed Grid from where he was sitting. The reaction was a lot different from the last time they met.

"You were a blacksmith? You don't know how happy I was when I heard that you won the championship!"

"Idan..."

He was happy that Grid won? Grid, whose heart had become as desolate as the dry desert, felt touched. Despite being a mad chef, Grid was glad to see Idan. This lasted for one second.

"Hahahat! Won't guests come like a tide if I announce that the winner of the smithy competition likes coming to my restaurant?"

"...Give me something to eat."

Grid sat down at a table. Yang Fei approached him with her expressionless face and handed him the citron tea.

"Today's tea is a service. I'm just a poor girl, but I want to congratulate you on your victory. But I will have to starve this evening."

Her expression didn't change despite her words. Grid knew that Yang Fei was responsible for her siblings and felt burdened. But he didn't refuse the free service.

'In any case, I will give her a salary when I bring her with me to the West Continent.'

Grid rationalized it and enjoyed the taste of the free tea. Yang Fei gazed at him and carefully lifted her skirt.

“That... Today my thighs are stiff.”

Her pale face became extremely red. Yang Fei was very ashamed. She already knew. Grid’s massage wasn’t a simple massage.

‘This child... ’

It was strange how she was actively pursuing this. Maybe Sua would be the same.

‘Are the women of the East Continent like this?’

Grid kneaded Yang Fei’s white thighs with his fingers. A soft feeling was felt from his fingertips.

“Urgh.”

Yang Fei lost strength in her legs and sat down. Grid thought her red ears were cute and started to actively move his hand.

[Affinity with Yang Fei has risen.]

[Affinity with Yang Fei...]

[Dexterity has increased by 1.]

Grid seriously thought that he would never starve to death as long as he had his fingers.

Chapter 547

"Weeeeeek!"

Food and shelter. They were the basic elements of human life and a source of human pleasure. It was hard for humans to live when they lacked food and shelter. They were beings that desired a bigger and nicer house, more expensive clothes, and more delicious food.

However, Grid boldly gave up on this. His desire to be stronger was larger than his desire to eat good food. Of course, it wasn't that easy.

"Cough cough! Damn Idan! How can the beef sirloin he cooks taste like shit?"

The bathroom in Idan's restaurant. Grid was tearful and had a runny nose. It was the aftermath of vomiting up the garbage food. The terrible thing was that his stats didn't go up despite eating such trash. Grid felt resentful of this world that was filled with the concept of probability. It was enough to make him tremble.

"But in the end, I'm the one who chose to eat Idan's food... The result might be bad, but I feel no regret about my choice."

He couldn't look serious talking while he was still vomiting. However, Grid had pride in himself. He maintained his patience and perseverance until he got the results he wanted. He was now aware that this wasn't something everyone could do.

"Well... The good news is that my empty stomach is resolved."

His stamina had been restored to normal.

Spit spit. Grid left and headed straight to Pangea Castle. He lay down on the bed in the room assigned to him and logged straight out.



"Ugh... I still feel sick."

Shin Youngwoo's complexion was pale as he left the capsule. The taste of Idan's food was still lingering in his mouth.

"It should be okay if I eat something sweet."

He only gave up on good food in Satisfy. Now he was craving a sweet potato latte. It was warm, soft, and sweet. If he bought one on the way home after a morning jog, all his fatigue would melt away. It was a luxury that he wouldn't have even thought of when he was poor. Now it was nothing for Shin Youngwoo to spend 6,000 won on himself. He donated 3,300 won to Uni X, so how could he hesitate to buy a 6,000 won beverage?

Compare it. Originally, Youngwoo was only stingy with others. He wouldn't have bought a 800 million won car if he was stingy with himself.

"I will go eat."

Youngwoo stretched for a long time in the garden and entered the elevator. Then he headed to the famous cafe chain store on the first floor of the building.

"Welcome."

A panoramic cafe. It was a cozy space comparable to a cafe in the city center. A cafe employee greeted him with a bright smile and Youngwoo ordered a sweet potato latte. He sat at the sunny window seat and made a gentle expression.

'The buildings of the guild members will soon be completed.'

Six high-rise buildings were currently under construction next to Youngwoo's building. They were buildings owned by Yura, Jishuka, Pon, Huroi, and Vantner. Youngwoo felt like a new person. He felt happy that his former debt-ridden self was now a landlord and that his colleagues were doing well. His heart was happy enough to fill the world.

The employee handed him his drink with a soft smile, before asking with an anxious expression. "I've seen the news. The Overgeared Guild is having a hard time these days.

Is it okay?"

"?"

The Overgeared Guild was having a hard time?

'Aren't we doing well?'

Youngwoo was speechless and the employee explained to him.

"I heard from the players that belong to the Eternal Kingdom. I heard that Bairan and Patrian are completely isolated by the enemy. It's so sad. I would've fought for Overgeared if my level was a little higher."

"...The players?"

Youngwoo realized his mistake.

'That bastard Aslan gave quests to kill Overgeared!'

Lauel had said that Overgeared could block any enemy attacks even if Grid wasn't there. Become strong in the East Continent and return. At the time, Grid had obediently nodded.

'I didn't expect the players to intervene.'

He was still stupid.

Kkuok!

He jumped out of his seat. He was running to the elevator when he stopped in place. It was because the cafe owner had just brought out a cake that looked good.

"I will eat well."

He couldn't resist a free meal! Youngwoo collected the cake and boarded the elevator. He pressed the button for the penthouse and pulled out his phone.

"...No. He'll just tell me not to worry."

Youngwoo had thought about contacting Lauel. He changed his mind and pulled out a business card from his wallet, calling that number. The call was set at the cost of the receiver. The reason?

“Bunny Bunny? Uh, um... What is turn on the translator in English?”

It was an international call!



Bairan.

The small city adjacent to Winston was originally under the jurisdiction of Marquis Steim. After gaining big achievements in the north, it was given to Jishuka and then Grid. Yura wanted to protect it. Bairan was a territory that Jishuka, a founding member of Overgeared, brought as a gift.

Yura only brought herself to Overgeared. In addition, she wasn't able to do much after that. She just helped in the Tiramet raid. From the standpoint of Overgeared, wasn't she worthless?

‘I need to prove my worth.’

It wasn't just a one-dimensional desire to look good for Grid. It was natural to contribute to the organization that she belonged to.

Step.

Yura stepped onto the wall of the small fortress. She pulled out a yellow hair band and tied up her long black hair. The souls of thousands of enemy players watching her flew away for a while. Slim limbs and a perfect face. The proportions of Yura's body were so unrealistic that they wondered if she was made by God.

“Wow... Her face became smaller after her hair was tied up.”

“She's better than NPCs. That's a real person?”

"So pretty..."

People from various races exclaimed. Skin that was whiter than snowflakes. The

gleaming lips and eyes that charmed anyone who saw them. It was natural for people present to be attracted to her. Pon saw the reactions of the enemies and laughed.

‘They’ve lost their minds. I admire her beauty every time I see her.’

Pon only cared about becoming strong in the game. But in reality, he was a man who couldn’t live without women. For him, Yura was a really desirable woman. But he had already given up on Yura. He had no intentions of becoming rivals with Grid.

“According to the report, there are 10,000 enemies. Half of them are players.”

On one hand, it was encouraging that the players were incorporated into the army. It was because the kingdom’s army system made it easy to send in spies. Of course, it wasn’t weak enough to sneak in the Overgeared members. But Pon’s personality was moderate and he had a variety of contacts.

“This is interesting. The average level of the kingdom’s soldiers is 180, and the players are 140.

“Considering that most of the nearby hunting grounds are low to medium level, it’s natural that the players’ levels are low. But I didn’t expect the level of the kingdom’s soldiers to be so high.”

“I agree. The average level of the soldiers that are attacking Patrian is only 160. Why did they send this army here instead of Patrian?”

“It’s because Bairan is closer to the capital than Patrian. From the kingdom’s point of view, it’s more convenient to have a base in Bairan.”

“I see. Tsk, they wouldn’t have dared attack Bairan if Marquis Steim had taken our side. Doesn’t he know that he became a marquis thanks to Grid?”

“You have to understand the position of Marquis Steim. His essence is a loyal subject of Eternal. Even if the king killed his brother, it isn’t easy to betray him. More than anything else, war is scary. He’s afraid his precious people will be swept away by it. I respect his heart.”

Yura was a former member of the Yatan Church and familiar with slaughter. She was always covered in the blood of the enemy and got the nickname of Blood Witch. But at that time, she was just acting faithful to her role. Unlike Lael, she didn’t regard people

as tools and appreciated Marquis Steim's heart. She knew that a man who cherished his people had value.

'A talented person who is essential for Youngwoo's kingdom.'

They would win the war without putting pressure on Marquis Steim. Yura pledged and pulled out a sword. Yes, it was a sword instead of a gun. It wasn't a bayonet with a blade at the end, but a pure sword that was 1 meter in length. Pon tilted his head to one side.

"A sword? Isn't a Demon Slayer's main weapon a magic engineering gun?"

"The sword can also be used as a primary weapon. A Demon Slayer has the same level of Gun Mastery and Sword Mastery."

The reason she chose a gun was because the former Demon Slayer did so. She thought that a gun was a better weapon than a sword for a Demon Slayer. But she changed her thoughts since the National Competition. She had suffered in close combat since her days as a black magician. She didn't want to be afraid of enemies approaching anymore.

In addition, a crucial reason for her selection of the sword was Grid. Grid couldn't make a gun alone. He needed the help of magic and alchemy. On the other hand, Grid could make a sword alone. Using a sword meant it was easier to receive a weapon from Grid.

Thus, Yura chose the sword. This was a great choice.

Black magician. She formulated and arranged magic with quick responses that were beyond common sense and displayed strong combat capabilities. Her ability to calculate in real time combined with swordsmanship made her as deadly as the thorns on roses.

"Whenever the cooldown time of my basic skills return, I will open the gate and act."

"...Huh?"

"The enemies are level 200. If I go out and kill 100 people, we will be able to win the win if this keeps repeating."

“..”

Her brain resembled Lauel, while her personality was like Grid. Pon was confused by this crazy tactic and tried to stop her.

"No, this won't work no matter how strong you are. Your stamina is a problem, and the fortress..."

He was too late. Yura had already jumped down the wall and ordered the soldiers to open the gate.

Kiiiiik!

"What?"

"Opening the gate themselves?"

"Are they crazy?"

The kingdom's soldiers and players laughed as they watched Bairan's gate opening. They had 10,000 people, while the other side had 2,000. Bairan should be closing themselves up like a turtle, not opening the gate.

"Hahaha! Bairan? You can't fight and now you want to surrender? Keeok!"

They expected to enter with no blood shed. Then the bodies of the excited players started to turn grey one by one.

Peeng!

Peng! Pepepeng!

It was a grey feast of grey-colored pillars rising to the sky. Yura was at the center. Her expression was unchanged while the sword supposed to be for destroying demons was now taking human life. She was a grim reaper that was as beautiful as a goddess.

"The female version of Kraugel?"

Yura used Image Sublimation in the midst of the bombardment of arrow and magic. Pon couldn't help having this thought as he watched Yura moving through the enemies

like lightning. She was the former 5th ranked user. She was also a genius, and now she was a legend.



“Crazy... What are these people?”

The fortified city of Patrian.

The players of the Eternal Kingdom turned white. Every time Jishuka fired an arrow, dozens of allies died. Hundreds of soldiers were stopped by Vantner and Toban’s shields. Every time the Overgeared members entered the battlefield with Regas in front, the army was ravaged. For the ordinary and low level users who couldn’t deal with more one or two soldiers, the Overgeared members were transcendent.

The second day of the war. The high rankers quietly watching the Eternal soldiers and ordinary players shrink back stood at the crossroad of choice. Should they give their strength to the Eternal Kingdom and strike Overgeared as planned, or stand back?

‘I would’ve added my strength if the Eternal Kingdom was a bit stronger.’

‘The number of troops isn’t high, so I’m reluctant to help out.’

At the start of the game. Most players chose the Saharan Empire as their starting point. The empire had a wide range of infrastructure that made it easier to enjoy the game. The Eternal Kingdom compared to the empire? It was a village located in the north of the continent.

The awareness level was third-rate. As a matter of fact, the number of players belonging to the Eternal Kingdom was small and the quality was low. It happened when the high rankers decided to leave the battlefield.

“Reinforcements have arrived!”

A voice roared out on the battlefield. Everyone's attention naturally turned that way. Then the players of the Eternal Kingdom regained their color.

Jeff, Ralph, and Bubatz. The masters of the former Seven Guilds led their guilds to intervene in the war. Bubatz, who had the strongest CC and a reputation for being unrivalled on the battlefield, smiled with satisfaction.

"I can't miss an opportunity to mess with Grid."

Bubet wasn't a member of Eternal and hadn't been given the quests to kill Overgeared. But that didn't matter to him. Grid had frustrated him several times in the National Competition and the Reidan invasion, so he only dreamt of revenge.

"Let's go! Wipe out Overgeared!"

"Waaahhhhhhhh!"

The appearance of the powerful army enhanced morale. The high rankers noticed this and also joined the offensive. Jishuka's beautiful face wrinkled.

"The puppies have become dogs."

It was a bit dangerous.

Chapter 548

[Reclaim Borneo]

Level of Difficulty: Varies depending on the competency.

Borneo has been captured by the Overgeared Guild.

Borneo is a fortified city on the border of the Eternal Kingdom and is a vital base for the defense of the Gauss Kingdom.

King Cactus has commanded you.

Recapture Borneo and wipeout the malicious group Overgeared that dared to invade the territory of the Gauss Kingdom. Those who are loyal to the kingdom will gain reasonable rewards!

User Restriction: Level 130 or higher.

Quest Victory Conditions: Recapture Borneo in three days before the food supply runs out.

Quest Victory Reward: 1 level. A 10% increase in experience for all skills. One unique rated weapon and one epic rated armor.

* Additional compensation will be received if you defeat NPCs or players belonging to Overgeared.

"This is great. It's comparable to the rewards for the SS grade quest that I saw on the air."

"This is a war. I covet the rewards, but it isn't possible with the Overgeared members running around."

"In the first place, there aren't any quests with a 100% chance of success."

It was difficult for the Gauss Kingdom to advance into the central part of the continent due to the Eternal Kingdom. This place was more of a frontier than the Eternal Kingdom. There was no reason for players to choose this as their kingdom, so the number of players was very small. It was a kingdom for users who played lightly.

But weren't there less than 400 Overgeared members? Once all the troops were combined, the total number was only 6,000. On the other hand, there were 210,000 Gauss players who exceeded level 130. Even if only 1/10th of them participated in the quest, it was still more than double the Overgeared Guild. There was even information that the Overgeared Guild arranged less than 1,000 troops at Borneo. The restriction that there was only three days worth of food wasn't a hindrance.

'There are a lot of light users, so the participation rate of the quest is likely to fall.'

'But the fact that we have overwhelming numbers doesn't change.'

The Gauss players believed it wouldn't be difficult to recapture Borneo. They thought it would be resolved by pushing forward like a bulldozer. However, reality wasn't that easy.

Puk! Puuooooook!

"Keok!"

"Kyaak!"

A fortified city was called that for a reason. In particular, Borneo was a fortress designed with Great Magician Ashur as the enemy. It boasted solid walls that neutralized the magic bombardment of the Gauss soldiers. In addition, there were the archers of Overgeared placed on the wall.

The NPC archers were level 180.

It was a glimpse of how hard Overgeared had worked to raise their soldiers. In fact, the level of the soldiers wasn't the important issue. There was another fundamental problem and the Gauss players realized it. Why the Overgeared Guild was called overgeared!

"Crazy...! The soldiers' attack power is ridiculously high! Kuaaaak!"

The arrows of the Gauss players and soldiers couldn't penetrate the armor of the Overgeared troops, while the Overgeared arrows easily penetrated their armor. The power of the overgeared soldiers was preposterous. As a general rule, these weren't items that would normally be supplied to soldiers.

It was impossible even for the Saharan Empire. Not only did they need the money to mass produce the items and supply it to the soldiers, they needed a blacksmith with the skills to do so.

"This is Grid's power...!"

The Gauss players felt like they were possessed by a ghost. Grid didn't appear on the battlefield, but his presence was huge.

"Shoot! Continue shooting!"

The soldiers of Overgeared fired the arrows without rest. Under Piaro and Asmophel, they tirelessly built up their skills and stamina as elite soldiers. There was the bravery they learned from Jude and the archery from Jishuka. They didn't shrink back as they aimed the jaffa arrows at the enemy, and combined with Grid's Bow, they showed overwhelming attack power. The arrows pierced the enemy's shields, helmets, and armor without interruption.

The Gauss soldiers couldn't approach Borneo's walls. The river of blood created seized the ankles of the Gauss soldiers like a deep swamp. It was a disaster and they started to lose their numerical superiority.

"Kukukuk! Kuhahahahat!"

A laugh rang out on the battlefield. The river on the ground wriggled in response. It was the advent of Blood Warrior Katz. A class that demonstrated the strength of a legend on a stage with a large amount of blood.

"Be glad to know that the blood of worms like you is helping me. Blood Lane."

Kuoooooooooh!

The blood on the battlefield started to gradually rise into the sky. It was like a reverse rain. The red 'rain' rose into the air, causing the Gauss soldiers to stiffen with fright.

“Kukukuk! You will all die here today.”

Swaaaaaah!

At the same time as Katz’ declaration. The red blood in the air poured down on the Gauss soldiers. The battlefield became chaotic. The screams of the soldiers echoed infinitely and the blood they shed became Katz’ limbs, causing more casualties. The worst situation was infinitely repeated.

“Kukuk! Kuhahahahahat!”

Unlike the Eternal Kingdom that had to disperse troops to Bairan and Patrian, the Gauss Kingdom was able to concentrate on Borneo. Unfortunately, they met the demon king of blood and their first advance failed. But they were just the vanguard. The second reconnaissance army would arrive in two days, and it had more numbers and quality than the first army. The scary thing was that the second army included Soul Predator Seuron.

Like Katz, he was an existence that showed absolute power in the battlefield.

“I have to pay back Grid.”

Pepepepeng!

Seuron made dozens of soul spears by capturing the souls of the dead on the battlefield and massacred the Overgeared soldiers on the wall.

“That Lauel... He told me to last at least four days?”

The smile had disappeared from Katz’ face.



“Do you see? This is the biggest war since Satisfy opened!”

A battlefield where thousands of soldiers and NPCs were dying and killing each other. The scene of the carnage taken from the sky was more fierce and exciting than any raid image. The viewers’ blood was boiling with excitement, rather than shrinking back at the horrors of war.

Think about it! What other game in the world could recreate such a war? Before Satisfy opened, the mmorpg L.T.S. had only 2,000 participants in a war.

-Patrian Fortress is amazing... There are 15,000 people fighting;;

-Borneo has 20,000 people ⇨ ⇨

-Lim Cheolho had repeatedly said this.

-Satisfy isn't a game, but another world. Therefore, there are no limitations.

-The implementation of virtual reality didn't make sense in the first place. Lim Cheolho seems to be an alien.

The viewers were boiling with excitement. They were grateful to be born in an age where they could play Satisfy. They were envious of the Overgeared members who led thousands of soldiers and struggled for supremacy. They wanted to stand with the Overgeared members. Then...

-Why isn't Grid visible?

-I saw that a few days ago, he gained two levels in a few hours. It's either a bug or he's performing a great quest.

-Wow... Leaving the guild members alone on the battlefield while raising his level — —;;

-Or was there a mishap?

Public opinion was running wild.

As the Overgeared Guild gradually weakened on the third day of the war, there were various speculations about why Grid didn't show up. Grid was garbage, Grid quit Satisfy, Grid had been kicked out of Overgeared, there was a traffic accident, etc.

Most of them leapt to conclusions. It was the same for the media. The second and third tier media outlets were more interested in getting attention than reporting facts. They wrote speculative articles without knowing the facts.

『I suspect that Grid is trapped somewhere.』

『A few days ago, wasn't there an accident in Gangnam XXX where a supercar hit a pole? There are rumors that Grid is the owner of that supercar... 』

『Grid probably ran away. The Overgeared Guild is currently blocking the enemy by emphasizing the strength of an individual, but how long can this last? The Overgeared Guild will fall in a day or two. They will lose all their troops and territories, becoming broke. Grid probably knows there's no hope and ran away alone... 』

The media were originally masters of aggravation. They poked at all sorts of things, creating a big issue and spreading it to the world. The defense of the three Overgeared territories was of great interest to the world and the related broadcasts secured high ratings.

And at that time.

『Everyone, can you hear me?』

The fortified city of Patrian. The world's best gaming BJ, Bunny Bunny appeared on a wyvern.

Lalalalala~

It was the most powerful and brilliant fire wyvern. As he shouted loudly and the wyvern shot out a breath, the people struggling on the battlefield and the broadcasting cameras naturally paid attention to him. The satisfied Bunny Bunny opened his mouth. His cry was amplified throughout the battlefield.

『This is a message from Grid! I will kill anyone who hasn't retreated when I arrive in one minute!』

“ ... ”

Was there anyone who wasn't ready to die in a war? It wasn't normal to retreat just because of a threat.

"Hah, it's so funny."

"An arrogant bastard! If he can kill us, come and kill!"

"Kill me! Then I will resurrect and come back!"

The players of the Eternal Kingdom didn't shrink back. It was already known that even a strong person couldn't overturn a war with the power of an individual. Just look at Jishuka. She massacred thousands of soldiers since the war started and was now losing momentum. Her stamina was exhausted and the number of arrows she shot was significantly decreased.

Grid would be the same. Everyone thought this, while Bunny Bunny laughed happily on the wyvern.

'Good, good. This wouldn't be a broadcast if you retreat so easily.'

Endure and endure. Then they would be slaughtered by Grid, increasing the number of viewers. Bunny Bunny started counting down.

『You have 30 seconds.』

"Bah! Let him come!"

『20 seconds.』

"How can Grid handle all of us alone?"

『10 seconds.』

9 seconds, 8 seconds, 7 seconds, 6 seconds...

The battlefield became silent as it reached 5 seconds. The Eternal players who were talking a while ago gulped hard. They had no doubt that they could handle Grid, but there would be huge sacrifices. And finally.

『0 seconds! Now God Grid will emerge!』

The moment Bunny Bunny mentioned Grid's appearance. The ratings of Bunny Bunny's broadcast and all broadcasts reached the peak. People had high expectations. Grid would descend like a storm and wipe out his enemies! However...

"...Not coming?"

『...』

Grid didn't appear and Bunny Bunny turned into a shepherd boy. At the same time, in Pangea on the East Continent.

"How do I go back?"

Grid became frustrated because he didn't know how to return to the West Continent.

Chapter 549

A return scroll.

It was an everyday supply for anyone who played Satisfy. If certain conditions were met, the player would move to the return point that they set. This was also the resurrection point. Grid also had return scrolls, since it was a routine consumable that everyone would use.

Grid's resurrection point was Reidan. Not long ago, he tried to change the point to Pangea. However, he stopped, since he realized his path to return to Reidan would disappear. That's right. In other words, Grid had the idea that he could return to Reidan (West Continent) whenever he used the return scroll.

This was natural from Grid's point of view. But that conviction caused him grief.

[The Return Scroll doesn't work. Intercontinental movement isn't possible with the formula in this scroll.]

"...What's this?"

Intercontinental movement was impossible! It was enough to cause Grid confusion.

"Eh... Um."

Grid made a blank expression. There was only one recurring phrase in his head.

XX!

One day ago in reality. Therefore, three days ago in game time, Grid called Bunny Bunny and spoke to him. Grid would return to the West Continent as soon as he cleared a quest, so announce his appearance to the world at the time he set. He wanted everyone's attention to be concentrate on him. As always, Grid would impress the

world by appearing in a dramatic moment.

Finally, the promised time arrived. Grid finished the Subjugate the Armored Needles (2) quest and acquired five more silver thread. He was completely ready to act in the world. He would condemn the enemies who dared to invade his territory and attack his precious colleagues.

But what was this?

"The return scroll doesn't work!"

Grid started sweating while Braham became angry at him.

'How did you come to the East Continent? Wasn't it because of an intercontinental movement scroll? It is natural that an intercontinental movement scroll would be needed to return.'

"...Intercontinental movement scroll? Where do I get that?"

'The sage who handed you the scroll to the East Continent.'

"..."

Grid thought back. It was the time when he received the East Continent Movement Scroll from Sticks. Sticks had looked shocked when Grid used the scroll as soon as he received it. Now he knew why.

'He was embarrassed when I left without a scroll to return to the West Continent...'

'...'

"..."

It was a situation where they had nothing to say. Grid sighed. He resented his own impatience.

'I should always be calm and cautious instead of making constant mistakes...!'

He was a pathetic person! Grid was pulling at his hair when Braham spoke.

‘It’s true that you are pathetic, but should you blame yourself? Anyone can make a mistake unless they are a dragon or a god. It’s the same for the great demons or geniuses.’

“...Are you comforting me right now?”

Braham, whose ego was as high as the sky, was comforting others? Grid doubted his ears and Braham raised his voice.

‘W-What! That’s not it! Find a way to get out of this current situation instead of being self-defeating! It’s frustrating to watch!’

“Ah, yes... I don’t have time to do this.”

Now wasn’t the time to lose his soul. Overgeared was limited in numbers while the enemies were infinite. The Overgeared members would reach their limit and have all their territory taken. Grid had to find a way to return to the West Continent quickly. He soon figured out how. In fact, it wasn’t difficult.

"Isn't it just a simple phone call?"

Communication between the East Continent and West Continent was impossible. Grid was unable to send whispers to players on the West Continent and the summoning knights skill was also blocked. Grid logged out. Then he made an international call to Lauel.

-Master, I'm honored that you have contacted me. But I'm still in the game and am quite busy. I really don't have time.

“...”

-I won't forget my sin today until my life ends and my bones decay. I will be punished for the rest of my life.

Lauel tried his best to learn Korean but was speaking nonsense. Grid frowned at the words.

“If you’re busy, then I’ll speak quickly. I want you to take a West Continent Movement Scroll from Sticks and come to pick me up.”

-Huh? Surely you didn't leave without a scroll to return to the West Continent?

"I did."

-Kukuk! Oh dear, oh dear. Lord is truly great. It's unusual for someone to escape from the worthless prison called common sense.

"...Just hang up quickly, connect to the game and come to pick me up."

-I'm sorry, but that's impossible.

"What? Ah, it makes sense since you're in the middle of a war. If you're busy, then send someone else on your behalf."

-No. I'm your servant. I won't break your orders in any situation. It's just impossible to go to the East Continent because Sticks isn't present.

What was he saying?

"What do you mean? Where is Sticks?"

-Sticks not only has a vast knowledge, he has excellent magic abilities. So I asked him for a few favors.

"What favor?"

-I asked him to take command of the Ul Clan, including Princess Hwarin, to attack the rear of the Eternal army and then go to Siren.

The Ul Clan. A minority that Grid had rescued from the empire in the past. They had excellent magical talent, especially the royal family. If Sticks led them then their talents would sublimiate to another level. Grid was able to guess half of Lauel's intention. But he couldn't understand the other half.

"Why do you want them to go to Siren afterwards?"

-It's to call someone who is farming in the sea.

There was only one person Grid knew who was farming in the sea.

“Piaro?”

-Yes.

One of the biggest differences between a player and NPC was the ability to whisper. NPCs weren't able to whisper. In order to communicate with them, they had to use old-fashioned means such as letters or magic communication devices. Siren wasn't a developed city. Grid was convinced about the reason why Lauel asked Sticks to call Piaro.

"The most efficient method is to have Sticks use teleportation to bring Piaro as soon as possible... But won't Siren be in danger if Piaro leaves?"

In the first place, the reason why he left Piaro in Siren wasn't simply due to farming. It was to protect Siren from Blood Carnival. Lauel's peculiar laugh was heard by the concerned Grid.

-Kuk...! Kukuk! Aren't you becoming gentler? Lord, let me remind you of why we have to protect Siren.

"It's to safeguard the treaty..."

-I'm sorry to interrupt you, but why did we ally with Siren in the first place?

"It's for the sake of our development."

-That's right. How can we care about Siren when we are on the verge of destruction?

"..."

-We can't worry about Siren's well-being right now. The water clan of Siren will join us in this war to help. Just as we have an obligation to protect their territory, they have an obligation to defend our territory.

That's right. But wasn't it very hard to mobilize the water clan that still hadn't recovered from the war? The more worrisome part...

"Lauel, haven't you been planning to be hostile to Eternal long before the alliance with Siren? Then Siren was a victim from the beginning?"

-I can't say that they will be a victim. I'm not planning to use them as simple arrows, but an army. The number of human casualties will be higher. In addition, there's no guarantee that Blood Carnival will invade Siren again.

"Hrmm... Yes."

Grid couldn't denounce or deny Lauel's words. In the first place, he gave Lauel all authority because he trusted Lauel. Based on the need to protect Overgeared, Lauel's plans and ideas were justified. Lauel said goodbye.

-I have been gone for four minutes. This will lead to a confusion in the command system. I have to return to the game.

"Yes, you worked hard. Please send Sticks to me as soon as possible. Tell him to come to the White Hammer smithy in Pangea."

-Yes, he will probably arrive in 5 days.

The call ended. The conclusion?

"Bunny Bunny... I'm sorry for making you a liar..."

Grid's return to the West Continent was a failure. The current Grid didn't have the means to help his colleagues who were undergoing the greatest crisis since Overgeared were formed. He couldn't help feeling nervous.

"Always be calm and careful."

Grid calmed his mind as much as possible.

First of all, he connected to the Internet and watched the war videos in order to grasp the power of his teammates from the point of view of a blacksmith.

'Yura changed her main weapon. It's a good thing. I can finally make her a weapon. Pon is still using the armor I made five months ago? He isn't as lucky as me. Regas will soon reach the limit of the gauntlets' durability because he blocks the items with his hand... '

Overall, the equipment status of the Overgeared members was poor. It was the result of Grid concentrating on personal growth for a while.

“Among them, the one in the most urgent need of a new item is...”

Grid watched the video of Patrian. In the video, the beautiful woman with golden skin was struggling. Grid closely observed the bow she was using.

“Jishuka, I will start with you.”

Tak tak.

Grid stood up. He entered the capsule and headed to the White Hammer smithy as soon as he connected to Satisfy. The blacksmiths of the White Hammer smithy actively welcomed the hero who helped them win the competition. They had all the requirements needed to help Grid produce an item.

Ttang! Ttang!

The furnace swallowed up the white phosphorus wood. Grid squatted in front of the heat, hammering at the anvil without stopping. It was the Red Phoenix Breath, which looked like a ruby.

‘This can be attached to an item...’

Grid thought that it seemed possible to refine the ruby so that it burned more strongly. He thought that the stronger the breath was, the stronger the Red Phoenix Bow would be. Therefore, Grid challenged smelting the Red Phoenix Breath. But the breath was the essence of the Red Phoenix. It was difficult to handle it completely with the techniques of a legend. This smelting operation was the hardest thing Grid had done since becoming Pagma’s Descendant. He spent at least four days hammering at the anvil.

Any normal person would reach the end of their patience. But Grid was filled with strong ambition.

‘It’s an honor to work with the finest materials.’

Ttang! Ttang!

The sound of Grid’s hammering return the atmosphere of the White Hammer smithy to its peak.

Chapter 550

"This is embarrassing."

In the spacious fields of Reidan, farmer and Aura Master Hurent was impatiently waiting for Piaro to return. He grew nervous during training because he received the news that Overgeared was in the midst of a massive war. From his point of view, the news was like a lightning bolt out of the blue. He was worried that his valuable training ground would be ruined in the midst of the messy war.

"It has been busy in the last few weeks... They were preparing for war."

Piario taught Hurent to understand himself (?) and forgive (?) after he tried to invade Reidan. The training course he made according to Piaro's suggested method was valuable. He was proud every time he saw grains and vegetables sprout in the land that he cleared, and his heart pounded when he saw people happily eating them...

"No, this isn't it."

Why was he thinking about this? Hurent shook his head and denied his heart. But the fields were his training grounds and he wanted to keep them. He believed that showing the intact fields to Piaro would be a way to repay the favor. But how? The method was obvious.

"I have no choice but to fight."

Hurent opened a map of the Eternal Kingdom. He looked at Reinhardt in the east, Bairan in the north, Patrian in the south, and Reidan in the west.

'They have to pass through Patrian in order to advance from Reinhardt to Reidan.'

Reidan and Reinhardt weren't able to get to each other apart from through Reidan. The areas around Patrian were blocked by mountains or hills.

'This is deliberately designed terrain.'

It was easy to deduce. To the west of Reidan and the south of Patrian was the Saharan

Empire and Gauss Kingdom respectively. In other words, Patrian was a fortress designed to defend the kingdom from foreign powers. Eternal chose Patrian's position in order to intercept the Saharan Empire or Gauss Kingdom if they ever invaded.

'Patrian is a natural fortress. But now it's been taken by Grid?'

It would be painful for Eternal. In order to get rid of the rebel Grid, they needed to reclaim Patrian. But it wasn't an easy fortress to capture.

'It will be difficult to attack a fortress that is built as a means to stop the invasion of two nations. Eternal will concentrate on Bairan.'

It was best to attack Patrian from the north and the east simultaneously. They needed to occupy Bairan in order to do this. Hurent was convinced that Eternal's top priority would be the occupation of Bairan.

"Then I will protect Bairan."

Hurent decided to defend the fields of Reidan and immediately left Reidan. He once dreamt of becoming a sword saint. However, after realizing the value of aura, he pursued the ultimate path of an Aura Master. He was incomparably stronger than he was during the 1st National Competition and now he was moving for Overgeared.

This was a variable that even the genius Lael couldn't think of.



Eternal's navy sent the R77 unit to infiltrate Cork Island through a secret tunnel. They believed that the elite forces of R77 would do a great job. After assassinating the enemy commander and paralyzing the command system, the navy would gain a foothold for victory.

But the atmosphere was terrible. Originally, the flares should've appeared four hours ago. However, the set time had passed and there was no news. Cork Island in front of them was uncomfortably quiet.

"Did they fail the mission?"

Someone couldn't help asking. It was Navy Admiral Lebuck. The staff members flinched and started to give their opinion.

"Until four days ago, only the king knew that there was a secret tunnel on Cork Island. It is absolutely impossible for the rebels to deal with the infiltration of the R77 unit."

"It is a fact that R77 landed safely on Cork Island. They will be performing their mission as scheduled. But there are always variable that will delay the time."

Lebuck frowned.

"Isn't there a possibility for R77 to be caught after they landed on the island?"

"Admiral, R77's covert nature is the best in the navy. It is unlikely that they would be discovered."

"Wait a little longer. Good news will surely come."

"...Hrmm."

Lebuck decided not to fret any longer. Combining all the factors, including the abilities of R77 and the use of the secret tunnels, the probability of the R77 unit failing was almost zero. Then he was rewarded for his faith.

Peeeeeeong!

"Ohhh!"

The promised signal appeared from Cork Island. The color of the signal flare was blue. It was the signal that indicated the leader of the enemy was destroyed and they should go.

Lebuck ordered the entire fleet. "Don't damage the island, since it will soon be our property again! Stop ranged bombardment and move forward! Land and show the enemies the full force of our strength!"

The resistance of the enemy would be low after losing their commander. The artillery and magic shot from the coastal fortifications weren't threatening at all. It would be a vain resistance!

"Full landing!"

"Assault! Assault!!"

The navy ships arrived on the coast and the soldiers poured out at once. The soldiers' morale was sky high from the assuredness of their victory. Peak Sword laughed from the fortress as he confirmed their appearance.

"The blue signal that you told me was correct. I was a little suspicious."

"I have already committed myself to Overgeared. I have no desire to lie."

"That is a very good attitude. Keep this attitude for the rest of your life and learn from God Grid."

"Thank you for giving me a chance."

Soldier who was killed by Peak Sword. As soon as he resurrected, he came to Cork Island and expressed his intention to surrender. Why did he risk his career in the navy? It was because he realized there was no future in the Eternal Kingdom.

Two nights before. Soldier was thrilled after infiltrating through the secret tunnel. Once he saw Peak Sword waiting in front of the secret tunnel, he realized that the intelligence network of Overgeared was above the Eternal Kingdom. Soldier was convinced. The winner of this war would be Overgeared, not Eternal. Immediately after the war ended, Overgeared would develop into a national unit.

He made a decision. He would serve Grid and Overgeared, becoming a great success in that kingdom.

'A perfect opportunity to be a founding contributor. The chance fell down from the sky.'

Soldier would succeed in the new country.

On the other hand, Peak Sword was also excited.

'I waited for my stamina to fully recover before launching the signal and succeeded in making the weak navy land at my feet. Maybe...'

Was he going to break everyone's expectations and succeed in defending Cork Island? It was a big jackpot.



“Hoh?”

The second army that appeared to reclaim Borneo contained Seuron. He was amazed after attacking the Overgeared troops on the wall with his soul spears. The archers he thought were going to die were still alive?

‘They have 20% of their health left?’

Like any other game, Satisfy showed a disparity in strength depending on the level difference. It was virtually impossible for a level 100~200 user to survive the skill attack of a level 300 user. Katz was able to massacre the Borneo army using this fact.

Objectively, Seuron’s attack was superior to Katz, but the Overgeared members didn’t die. Who was Seuron? A unique class specialized in combat. His skill damage coefficient was so high that it couldn’t be compared with normal skills. But the lowly soldiers survived his skill?

“How is this possible?”

"If the soldiers’ bodies are this durable, how strong are the knights?"

The Gauss players were buzzing. Their fear of the Overgeared troops started to grow out of control. However, Seuron was delighted.

'Truly the Overgeared Guild... Even the soldiers are overgeared.'

Seuron wasn’t part of Gauss. He didn’t have any obligations to enter the war and wouldn't even get rewards. It was because he wanted to pay Grid back for his frustration during the Reidan invasion and National Competition. He fought in this war in the hopes of damaging Grid.

'Grid, I wonder how you raised the soldiers so well.'

He became more motivated. What if he slaughtered Grid’s soldiers and took away all their items?

"That Grid would become quite angry, right? Kulkul let’s play once."

Seokeok!

Seuron wielded his sword. The +9 Wisdom Sword. A one-handed sword that increased the wearer's strength and intelligence simultaneously. It had compatibility with the Brutal Heavy Sword and he used it during the 2nd National Competition. It wasn't lacking compared to Grid's production items and it was in the same class as Kraugel's True White Fang.

Furthermore, Seuron had a passive skill where 'if he attacked a person or monster with his weapon, he would absorb some of the soul of the target and increase his weapon's power.'

"Kuaaaaak!"

"W-What is this? Keeek!"

The Gauss players and soldiers were killed. They were confused because Seuron, who they thought was a friend, started attacking them.

Seokeok!

Puk puk! Puok!

All of a sudden, Seuron swung his sword and then the Gauss soldiers and players turned to grey. The unexpected sight made the world shocked.

-What is with Seuron?

-Why is he killing his allies when he is fighting to defeat the Overgeared members?

The expression 'ally' wasn't correct. Seuron wasn't part of the Gauss Kingdom. Strictly speaking, he was a third party unrelated to the war. Seuron only entered the war in the first place because of an individual grudge, not in order to help Gauss.

"S-Seuron, you! Kuaack!"

7th on the unified rankings. A unique class specialized in combat. In addition, Seuron had powerful items. His sudden surprise attack wasn't something that the Gauss army could respond to. The soldiers and players were all helpless. Seuron laughed at the Gauss players who were staring at him with angry and confused eyes.

"The weak people like you should be honored to have a chance to help me."

Paang!

Papapapang!

The Wisdom Sword started to resonate. Seuron exploited the souls from the many dead bodies on the battlefield and formed soul spears. It was the soul spears he had used before. But this time it was a little different and had significantly high magic damage.

Pepepepeok!

The soul spears once again hit the Overgeared archers on the walls. The momentum was much better than before. The vast majority of viewers watching the war were expecting the collapse of the archers. But Katz overturned their prediction.

"Blood Shield."

Kuwaaaaaang!

Just as Seuron seized the soul from corpses, Katz grabbed their blood to form a red shield and defend against the soul bombardment. It was the moment with those who exerted the greatest power on the battlefield, the Soul Predator and Blood Warrior, clashed.

Who would win? Everyone in the world showed great interest and expected a wonderful battle. But Seuron dismissed Katz.

"An epic class can't be compared to mine. You are several levels below me. Isn't that right?"

"...What?"

In fact, Katz had been nervous since Seuron appeared. He was exhausted from obstructing the advance of tens of thousands of soldiers for the past three days. At this time, he encountered a strong man he couldn't compete with. Yes, Katz recognized Seuron as an opponent. However, Seuron dismissed him and this hurt Katz' pride that he was famous for.

He gritted his teeth and showed his temper. "You beggar."

"What? Beggar?"

A high ranker was called a beggar? Seuron laughed as he doubted his ears.

"Calling me a beggar. It isn't realistic... You are at the level of a kindergarten student."

Seuron snorted. Katz looked down at him from the wall and opened his mouth. He shouted in a voice that was loud enough for everyone on the battlefield to hear.

"I will give one billion yen to everyone who injures that beggar's body. It will be 100 billion yen for anyone who kills him."

"...?"

1 billion yen? 100 billion yen? If it wasn't Katz saying this, everyone listening would've laughed. But who was Katz? He was the son of a top conglomerate in Japan. His family's collection of assets ranked as one of the top 10 in the world. Even oil-rich Middle Easterns would envy him. The weight of the 1 billion and 100 billion yen that emerged from his mouth wasn't light.

-I am connecting to the game now.

-Forming a party to go and attack Seuron.

The ratings for the war broadcasts started to fall sharply. Most viewers stopped watching and started to access the game. The situation on the battlefield wasn't too different. The Gauss players, who were already hostile to Seuron, started pointing their swords at him. Seuron was forced to tense against such a huge number.

"This crazy guy...!"

Seuron gulped while Katz laughed at the sight from the war.

"You should know that you are X in front of money."

A problem that couldn't be solved by just being overgeared was solved with money.



PDF by: traitor#ZEN